



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



32101 065972067



British League of Abst.

Library of



Princeton University.

from the bequest of

Dr. Theodore W. Hunt, '65

FROM





# THOUGHTS ON POPERY,

BY THE

REV. WILLIAM NEVINS, D.D.

*Late Pastor of a Church in Baltimore.*



REVISED BY ISAAC TAYLOR, ESQ.

*Author of Natural History of Enthusiasm, Ancient Christianity,  
&c. &c. &c.*

WITH NOTES FOR THE PRESENT EDITION, BY THE  
REV. A. S. THELWALL, M.A.

---

LONDON:  
PUBLISHED FOR THE PROTESTANT ASSOCIATION,  
AT THE OFFICE, 11, BUCKINGHAM STREET, STRAND, AND  
WILLIAM MACINTOSH, 24, PATERNOSTER ROW,  
AND ALL BOOKSELLERS.

1863.



# CONTENTS.

No.	Page
1. Sufficiency of the Bible as a Rule of Faith and Guide to Salvation	1
2. The Source of Heresies	5
3. Private Interpretation	5
4. Popery Unscriptural	9
5. Evil of believing too much	11
6. The Nine Commandments	13
7. Roman Catholic hostility to the Bible	17
8. Something for the Rev. Mr. H.	21
9. Distinction of Sins into Mortal and Venial	26
10. The Deadly Sins	27
11. Infallibility	29
12. A Religion without a Holy Spirit	33
13. The Keys	35
14. The Head of the Church	38
15. The power to forgive Sins	41
16. A Roman Catholic Book reviewed	45
17. Review of the Roman Catholic Book continued	49
18. The Pope an Idolater	54
19. Charles X. an Idolater	58
20. Idolatry near Home	61
21. Praying to Saints	65
22. Specimens of Roman Catholic Idolatry	70
23. More Specimens of Roman Catholic Idolatry	74
24. Image Worship	81
25. Relics	87
26. Seven Sacraments	91
27. Transubstantiation	94
28. Half a Sacrament	97
29. Extreme Unction	100
30. Doing Penance	103
31. The hardest Religion	106
32. More about Penance	111
33. A Fast-day Dinner	113
34. The Mass	114
35. More about the Mass	119
36. The Host	125
37. Priests	129
38. Celibacy of the Clergy	132

11-8-60 Hunt

5456  
673 (RECAP)

No.	Page
39. A Holier State than Matrimony	134
40. Auricular Confession	136
41. A Mistake Corrected	138
42. Purgatory	139
43. More about Purgatory	143
44. A Strange Thing	145
45. Canonizing Saints	147
46. General La Fayette not at rest	150
47. Prayers for the Faithful Departed	154
48. An Improvement	158
49. The Duke of Brunswick's Fiftieth Reason	161
50. The Duke's Seventh Reason	163
51. The Duke's Eleventh Reason	167
52. Beauties of the Leopold Reports	170
53. Partiality of the Church of Rome-	174
54. Puerility of the Roman Catholic Religion	177
55. Supererogation	179
56. Convents	182
57. Mr. Berington and Mrs. More	184
58. A new method of exciting Devotion	193
Appendix—General Remarks	197
The Creed of Pius IV.,	198
Notes on the Creed—Romish Cursing	201

# ERRATA.

Page 28, last line but 2,	<i>for repetition, read repetition.</i>
„ 52, „	7, <i>after (Rom. viii. 14) insert a ;</i>
„ 93, „	3, <i>for Rhemish read Rhemista.</i>
„ 96, „	1, <i>for Prov. xxi. read Prov. xvi.</i>
„ 110, „	5, <i>for of read by.</i>
„ 123, last line	<i>for ix. 11. 12 read ix. 11, 12</i>

# THOUGHTS ON POPERY.

---

## 1. *The Sufficiency of the Bible as a Rule of Faith and Guide to Salvation.*

THIS is the great matter in controversy between Protestants and Roman Catholics. *We* say the Bible is sufficient. *They* say that it is not. Now suppose that Paul the apostle be permitted to decide between us. We are agreed to refer the matter to him. Can our opponents object to this reference? Let Paul then be consulted in the only way in which he can be, namely, through his acknowledged writings. It is agreed on all hands that he wrote the *Second Epistle to Timothy*. Well, in the *third* chapter of that Epistle, and at the 15th verse, he writes to Timothy, thus, "And that from a child thou hast known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation." That the Greek is here correctly translated into English, any scholar may see.

Here then we have what Paul *wrote*; and I cannot believe that he would *write* in a letter to Timothy, that the Holy Scriptures are capable of being known by a child, and able to make wise unto salvation, and then *say*, to be handed down by tradition, that they are so obscure and abstruse that one can make nothing out of them.

But what did Paul write to Timothy about the Holy Scriptures? He reminds him that he had known them from a child; that is, he had been acquainted with them so far as to understand them from that early age. Now, either Timothy was a most extraordinary child, of which there is no proof, or else the Holy Scriptures of the Old Testament, and of the New, so far as the latter was

written and recognized at the time,\* are intelligible to a child. I see not how this conclusion can in any way be evaded. If the child of Eunice could and did know them, why may not my child, and your child, and any child of ordinary understanding? And what do we want more for a rule of faith, than a Bible which a child can understand? The Bible then cannot be insufficient as a rule of faith, through any want of *perspicuity* in it. That point is settled.

But Paul says something more to Timothy about these same Scriptures, "*which,*" he says, "*are able to make thee wise unto salvation.*" Why the apostle talks as if he had taken lessons from Luther. When did he live? They say that the Protestant religion is only three hundred years old; but here is a man who lived well nigh eighteen hundred years ago, that writes amazingly like a Protestant about the Holy Scriptures. He says (and I have just been looking at the Greek to see if it is so there, and I find that it is,) they are *able* to make thee *wise unto salvation*. Now who wishes to be wiser than that?—and if they can make *one* thus wise, they can make any number equally wise. So then the Scriptures

---

\* On examination it will appear that the case is still stronger than our Author states it. The Apostle Paul took Timothy to travel with him as a fellow-labourer when he visited Derbe and Lystra (Acts xvi. 1-3). This is commonly dated A.D. 52. Bishop Pearson, in his *Annales Paulini*, makes it a year sooner. But it does not appear that any one Book of the New Testament was at that time written: the only Scriptures, therefore, which Timothy could have known "from a child" were the Scriptures of the Old Testament. In these it appears that he was diligently instructed; and these alone, were able to make him "*wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.*"

But if the Scriptures of the Old Testament alone were able to make a child wise unto salvation through faith in Christ Jesus, how much more the Scriptures of the New Testament! For I suppose that no one will affirm, or imagine, that the Scriptures of the New Testament are not much more plain, in their statements concerning Jesus Christ and His Gospel, than those of the Old. On this point it is only needful to refer to Matt. xiii. 16, 17; and 2 Cor. iii. 12-18.—A. S. T.

can be known by children, and can make wise to salvation those who know them. This is Paul's decision, and here should be an end of the controversy. If this prove not the sufficiency of the Bible as a rule of faith and guide to salvation, I know not how anything can be proved.

I will tell you what I have determined to do the next time a Roman Catholic\* opens his mouth to me about the insufficiency and obscurity of our rule of faith. I mean to take hold of the sword of the Spirit by this handle—2 Tim. iii. 15 ; and I mean to hold on to this

\* Our readers will probably remember that Dr. Nevins wrote in the United States of America, where, in his time, Romanism was but little known, and the Romish controversy but little studied. No wonder therefore that he does not always write with all the accuracy of a practised Controversialist. He evidently uses *Catholic* for *Romanist*. This will never do. It is playing into the hands of the enemy. They make much use of the unguarded language of those Protestants, who concede to them the name of *Catholics*. It seems therefore desirable either to substitute the word *Romanists* for *Catholics*, throughout the Work, or at least to insert the word *Roman* before *Catholic* as Dr. Nevins has done in his first sentence ; and this latter course we intend to adopt.

WE are the true *Catholics* who hold fast the *ancient* Nicene Creed, and utterly reject all the unapostolical articles, which were appended to it in 1564, by the *modern* Creed of Pope Pius IV. ; and we should keep in remembrance the excellent saying of good Philip Henry, "I am too much a *Catholic*, to be a *Roman Catholic*." For those only deserve the name of *Catholics*, who stedfastly maintain the faith once delivered to the Saints, and embrace, in the bonds of Christian love and affection, all those who *hold* that faith, however they may differ in minor matters and circumstantialia ; that is to say, the *universal* Church of Christ, excluding none whom we have any reason to hope that Christ has accepted.

Besides prefixing the word *Roman* to *Catholic*, there are other slight alterations made here and there, in order to adapt some of the American expressions, used in the Work to our National feelings, and modes of thought and expression ; and a few notes are occasionally added to illustrate, and enforce some of the points touched upon. But we are careful to retain the whole of the Author's matter, meaning and arrangements.

A. S. T.

weapon of heavenly temper, and to wield it manfully, until my opponent surrender or retreat. He cannot stand before it.

But before I close this, I must say, that if the Scriptures which existed when Paul wrote to Timothy were able to make wise unto salvation, how much more are they with what has been added to the canon since ! And here, by the way, we have an answer to the question which the Roman Catholic asks with such an air of triumph: "How, if this be your rule of faith, did Christians manage before the New Testament was written and received ?" Very well ; they had Scriptures enough to make them "wise unto salvation" as early as the time of Timothy ;\* and they had, many years before that, all the Old Testament, if not part of the New. Now, with Moses and the prophets, and the psalms, and Matthew's gospel, and perhaps some others, together with a large number of divinely-inspired men, I think they must have managed very comfortably.

One thing more I desire to say. It is this : that there is an advantage for understanding the Bible, which does not belong to any book whose author is not personally accessible. The advantage is, that we have daily and hourly opportunity to *consult the Author* of the Bible on the meaning of it. We can, at any moment we please, go and ask Him to interpret to us any difficult passage. We can lift off our eyes from the word of truth, when something occurs which we do not readily comprehend, and direct them to the throne of grace. And what encouragement we have to do this ! *James* tells us, "If any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally, and upbraideth not ; and it shall be given him." So then we have the Bible to inform and

---

\* That is to say, as early as the time when Paul and Timothy laboured together in the Gospel, parts of the New Testament might have *then* been written (particularly the Gospel according to St. Matthew), though not when Timothy was a child. See note in page 2.—A. S. T.

guide us, and we have constant opportunities of consulting its Author in regard to its meaning. Is it not enough? I, for one, am satisfied. I can dispense with the fathers, &c. &c.

---

## 2. *The Source of Heresies.*

The Roman Catholics say it is the Bible. They trace all the errors and divisions which prevail, to the Scriptures as their fountain. Do they know whose book it is which they thus accuse? How dare they charge God with being "the Author of confusion"? But is the Bible to blame for heresies? Christ gives a very different account of the matter. He says (Matt. xxii, 29) to the Sadducees, "Ye do err, *not* knowing the Scriptures." He makes *ignorance of the Scriptures* the source of heresies. He does not agree with the priests.

It is very strange if the reading of the Scriptures is the cause of heresies in religion, that the Bereans, who *searched* them *daily*, because they would not take on trust even what *Paul* said, (and I suspect they would not have treated *Peter* any more civilly), did not fall into any of these errors. It would seem to have had quite a contrary effect, for it is added, "*therefore* many of them believed." (Acts xvii. 11, 12). Whatever these Bereans were, it is clear that they were not good Roman Catholics.

But after all, it is not surprising that these noble Bereans did not fall into any fatal error by reason of reading the Scriptures, since Peter says of Paul's hardest parts and most obscure passages, that they do nobody any harm, but such as are both "unlearned and unstable," and that they do *them* no harm, except they *wrest* them, that is, do absolute violence to them. (2 Peter iii, 16.)

---

## 3. *Private Interpretation.*

It is known to every body how strenuously the Roman Catholics oppose the reading of the Bible; or rather I

should say the reader exercising his mind on the Bible which he reads. He may *read* for himself, if he will only let the church *think* for him. He may have a New Testament, and he may turn to such a passage as John iii, 16; "God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten Son, &c." or to that, Matt. xi, 28, 30; "Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest, &c." and he may read the words, but then he must not attempt to put a meaning upon them; though it be very difficult to avoid attaching a sense to them, since they are quite as easy to be understood as they are to be read. But he must not do it. At his peril he must not. He is guilty of the crime of private interpretation, if he does. Before he pretends to understand those passages, he must inquire how the Church has always interpreted them, and what the popes and general councils have thought about them, and how *all* the *fathers* from Barnabas to Bernard, not one excepted, have understood them. Well now, it strikes me as rather hard upon the poor sinner, that he should be made to go through this long and difficult process before he is permitted to admire the love of God in the gift of his Son, and before he can go to Jesus for rest. And somehow I cannot help suspecting that it is not necessary to take this *circuitous* course; and that it is not so very great a sin, when one reads such passages, to understand them according to the obvious import of their terms.

But the Roman Catholic asks, "Does not Peter condemn private interpretation?" And they point us to his 2nd Epistle, i, 20; "Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation." Now you must know that Roman Catholics, though they have no great attachment to the Bible, are as glad as any people can be, when they can get hold of a passage of it, which seems to establish some tenet of theirs. And as only a very small portion of the Bible has even the *appearance* of favouring them, one may observe with what eagerness they seize upon, and with what tenacity they cling to, the rare passages which seem

to befriend their cause. Thus they do with this passage of Peter. They quote it with an air of triumph, and exultingly ask what Protestants can have to reply to it.

Now in the name of Protestants, I will state in two or three particulars what we have to say in opposition to the Roman Catholic inference from these words of Peter. We say that that passage does not make for the Roman Catholic cause; *first*, because if the right of private judgment and private interpretation is taken away by it, as they affirm, yet it is taken away with respect to only a small part of the Bible, viz. the *prophetic* part. He does not say that any other part, the historical, the didactic, or the hortatory, is not of private interpretation; but only the prophetic, that part in which something is *foretold*. He does not say *no Scripture*, but "*no prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation.*" Allowing then to the Roman Catholic all that he contends for, we are left with by far the larger part of the Bible open to private interpretation. Peter restricts us only in the matter of *prophecy*!

But *secondly*, let me say, that to whatever the remark of the apostle has reference, it can easily be shown that it does not mean what the Roman Catholic understands it to mean. This is evident from what follows it. I wish the reader would turn to the passage. He will perceive that Peter, having said that no prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation, proceeds to assign the reason of that assertion; or rather, as I think, goes into a further and fuller explanation of what he had said: "For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man, (that is, it was not of human invention, it did not express the conjectures of men), but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost." Now I would ask if this reason confirms the Roman Catholic view of the passage? Is the fact that the Bible was written by men inspired of God to write it, any reason why it should not be of private interpretation? Does the circumstance that God gave them the thoughts, even suggested to them the words in which they should clothe

them, render the production so unintelligible, or so equivocal in its meaning, that a private individual cannot be trusted to read it? That would be to say that God cannot make Himself understood as easily as men can! The Roman Catholic argument from this passage may be stated thus; *The Bible is an inspired book, therefore too obscure and ambiguous to be of private interpretation! Inspired, therefore unintelligible.*

If it is so hard to understand what God says, how was the divine Saviour able to make himself understood by the common people, who heard him gladly? I suspect they knew what He meant when He said, "Come unto me, and I will give you rest." The sermon on the mount seems to have been understood by those who heard it. No one thought of asking how others understood it. No one felt the necessity of an interpreter: every one exercised his private judgment on what Christ said. Now suppose that what Jesus said to the people, and they found no difficulty in understanding it, had been taken down in writing at the time, would not they who understood it when they *heard* it, have equally understood it when they *read* it? The *spoken* discourses of Christ were intelligible; have they become unintelligible by being *written*?

To return for a moment to the passage in Peter. I consider that the word rendered in verse 20, *interpretation*, should be translated as Dr. M'Knight translates it *invention*; or as another renders it, *impulse*: and verse 21 should be considered as explanatory of that which precedes it. If the Apostle really intended to deny the right of private judgment, why does he in verse 19 exhort all the saints to whom he wrote, to *take heed* to "the more sure word of prophecy," the very thing in reference to which he is supposed to deny the right of private judgment? Why should they *take heed* to it, if it is not of private interpretation?—and why does he speak of it as "a *light* that shineth in a dark place?"

Finally:—If no part of Scripture is of private interpretation, then of course the passage of Scripture,

2 Pet. i, 20, is not of private interpretation; and yet the Roman Catholic exercises his private judgment upon it, and submits it to the private judgment of the Protestant, in the hope thereby of making him a Roman Catholic! No part of Scripture, according to him, may be privately interpreted, but that which affirms that *no part, not even itself*, may be privately interpreted!

#### 4. *Popery Unscriptural.*

I undertake to prove that the Roman Catholic religion is *unscriptural*—that it is not borne out by the Bible. If I can do that, I shall be satisfied; for a religion, professing to be Christianity, which does not agree with the statements of Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, Paul, *Peter*, James and Jude, will, I am persuaded, never go down in the United States of America.\* It may do for Spain, Portugal, and Italy; but it will not do here. There is too much respect for the Bible, in this republican land to admit of such a thing. Republicans know too well how much liberty owes to the Bible.† They know that tyranny cannot exist where the Bible, God's *Magna Charta* to mankind, is in the hands of the people. Besides, the people of this country have too much good common sense to take that for Christianity about which the evangelists and the apostles knew nothing. I think therefore, that I shall have gained the point, if I show that Romanism and the Bible are at variance. This, if I mistake not, I can easily do.

The Roman Catholics act very much as if they themselves did not regard their religion as being *Scriptural*. Why, if they believe that their religion is the religion of the Bible, do they not put the Bible into the hands of the people, and advise them to read it, that they may become, or continue to be, good Roman Catholics? Why

---

\* Nor in any Protestant country. It will not do in any place in which the Bible is known.

† And so do the inhabitants of this free and Protestant land; though we are not Republicans.

not circulate far and wide the book which contains their religion? They need not take our translation of it. They have one of their own—the Douay. Let them circulate that. Why do they leave the whole business of distributing the Scriptures to the Protestants? Above all, why do they oppose the operations of Bible Societies, when they are only multiplying and diffusing copies of the book which contains the Roman Catholic religion?

I am particularly surprised that the Roman Catholics are not more anxious to put into general circulation the two epistles of *their* St. Peter, who they assert was the first Bishop of Rome, and earliest Pope. They acknowledge that he wrote two epistles, and that they are extant. Why in the name of common sense, do they not let every Roman Catholic have them? I do not wonder that they wish to keep out of sight of the people the epistles of Paul, who says (Gal. ii. 11) that he withstood Peter to the face, "because he was to be blamed." Paul forgot at the moment that Peter was supreme and infallible! We are all liable to forget. But why the rulers of the church should be unwilling to let the people hear Peter, is the wonder with me. I have been reading his epistles, to see if I can discover why the Roman Catholics are not friendly to their circulation. Perhaps it is because in them he says nothing about *Rome*; unless by *Babylon* (1 Ep. v. 13) he means Rome, as John does in the Revelation; and not a word about his being Bishop of Rome or Pope! He seems to have no idea that he was a pope. He says in his first Epistle, v. 1, "The elders which are among you I exhort, *who also am an elder.*" An elder! was that all? Why, Peter, do you forget yourself? Do you not know that you are *universal Bishop, Primate of the Apostolical College, Supreme and Infallible Head of the Church*? He seems never to have known one word about it! Now I think I have hit upon one reason why it is thought best that the people in general should not be familiar with the writings of Peter.

I wish, for my part, that the Roman Catholics would

print an edition of Peter's Epistles, and give them general circulation among their members; for if the religion of these epistles is their religion, I have no more controversy with them.

---

### 5. *The Evil of Believing too much.*

It is a common saying among the Catholics, that it is better to believe too much than to believe too little; and it is one of the arguments with which they endeavour to make proselytes, that they believe all that Protestants believe, besides a good deal that Protestants do not believe. Hence they would have it inferred that their religion possesses all the advantages which belong to Protestantism, and some more into the bargain; so that if the religion of the Reformation is safe, *much more* is that of the church of Rome safe. Now, as I am certain that this way of *talking* (*reasoning* it is not worthy to be called) has some influence in making Roman Catholics, I shall take the liberty of examining it.

Why is it better to believe too much than to believe too little? *Excess* in other things is not better than *defect*. To eat or drink too much is not better than to eat or drink too little. To believe that two and two make five, is as bad as to believe two and two make three. One of these errors will derange a man's calculations as much as the other. The man who believes that two and two make five, has no advantage because he believes the whole truth and a little more.

A certain writer, who ought to be in high authority at Rome as well as every where else, represents additions to the truth to be as injurious and as offensive to God as subtraction from it. Rev. xxii. 18, 19. "If any man shall *add* unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book." Here you see what a man gets by believing too much. It is not altogether so safe a thing as the Roman Catholics represent it to be. Adding is as bad as taking away. For every article added there is a *plague* added.

I suppose that one reason why these additions to the truth are so offensive to God, is, that they are such additions as *take from* that to which they are added; just as when a man puts "a piece of new cloth into an old garment, that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse." (Matt. ix, 16). All the additions of the Church of Rome to Christianity take away from some of its doctrines. She first cuts a hole in the robe of Christ, and then applies her patch! In order to make room for her doctrine of human merit, she has to take away just so much from the merit of Christ. The Protestant doctrine is that we are justified by faith alone, without the deeds of the law. Nay, says the Roman Catholic; our own good works have something to do in the matter of our justification. Now this addition does not leave entire that to which it is added, but takes from it!

We hold to the *perfection* of the one sacrifice offered by Christ on the cross. The Roman Catholics add to this the sacrifice of the mass. They are not satisfied with Christ being "*once* offered to bear the sins of many," but they teach the strange doctrine that Christ is offered as often as a priest is pleased to say mass!

Nothing is farther from the truth than that the Roman Catholic believes all which the Protestant believes, besides a great deal that the Protestant does not believe. The latter part of the assertion is correct. The Catholics believe a great deal which the Protestants do not. In the *quantity* of their faith they far surpass us. There is the whole that is comprehended in *tradition*. They believe every word of it—while Protestants are satisfied with Holy Scripture. But the Roman Catholics do not believe all that Protestants believe; they do not believe the Protestant doctrine of regeneration, or justification, or other cardinal doctrines.

But, asks one, is not all that Protestants believe contained in the Scriptures? Yes. Well, Roman Catholics believe the Scriptures. Therefore they believe all which Protestants do; and then, moreover, they believe tradi-

tion; so that they believe all which Protestants believe, and some more besides. Very logical, to be sure! But suppose that tradition and Scripture happen to contradict each other, how then? What sort of an addition to a testimony is a contradiction of it? I might give some precious specimens of these contradictions. The Roman Catholic believes with Scripture, that "marriage is *honorable* in all;" and he believes with tradition, that it is *very disgraceful* in some. One of his rules of faith affirms that "all our righteousnesses are as filthy rags;" but the other assures him that there is merit in his good works. One says that Peter was *to be blamed*, but the other asserts his infallibility. According to one, Peter was a simple *elder*, but according to the other, universal bishop, &c. The Roman Catholic says he believes both, and therefore he is in a safer state than the Protestant. Well, when I can be convinced that two contradictory assertions are both true, I may believe as much as the Roman Catholic believes. Meanwhile I am satisfied with believing *enough*; and not caring to be more than perfectly safe, I shall continue to be a Protestant.

---

#### 6. *The Nine Commandments.*

"*Nine* commandments! What does that mean? I always thought there were *ten*." There used to be that number. There were ten proclaimed by the voice of God from Mount Sinai; and ten were written by the finger of God on the tables of stone; and when the tables were renewed, there were still ten; and the Jews, the keepers of the Old Testament Scriptures, always recognized ten; and so did the primitive Church, and so do all Protestants in their creeds and catechisms. But the Roman Catholics—(you know they can take liberties, for they are the true church, they are infallible. A person, and so a church, which cannot possibly make a mistake, need not be very particular about what it does,) these Christians who have their head a way off at Rome,

subtract one from the ten commandments; and so they have but nine commandments. Theirs is not a Decalogue, but a Nonalogue.

It is just so. When many years ago I first heard of it, I thought it was a slander of the Protestants. I said, "Oh, it cannot be that they have dared to meddle with God's ten commandments, and leave out one. They cannot have been guilty of such impiety. Why, it is just as if some impious Israelite had gone into the holy of holies, opened the ark of the covenant, and taking out the tables of stone, had with some instrument of iron, obliterated one of the commands which the divine finger wrote on them." But then it struck me how improbable it was that such a story should ever have gained currency, unless there was some foundation for it. Who would ever have thought of charging Roman Catholics with suppressing one of the commandments, unless they had done it, or something like it?

So I thought I would enquire whether it was so or not; and I did, and found it to be a fact, and no slander. I saw with my own eyes the catechisms published under the sanction of bishops and archbishops, in which one of the commandments was omitted; and the reader may see the same thing in "The Manual of Catholic Piety," printed no farther off than Philadelphia.\* The list of the commandments runs thus:—

1. I am the Lord thy God; thou shalt not have strange Gods before me.
2. Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain.
3. Remember the Sabbath-day, &c.

---

\* See also "The Most Reverend Dr. James Butler's Catechism: Revised, Enlarged, Approved, and Recommended by the Four R.C. Archbishops of Ireland as a General Catechism for the Kingdom. Dublin: Printed by Richard Coyne, 4, Capel Street, Printer and Bookseller to the Royal College of St. Patrick's, Maynooth, and Publisher to the R.C. Bishops of Ireland."—page 36.—A. S. T.

The reader will see that the commandment which the Roman Catholics leave out as being grievous to them, is the second of the series. It is the one that forbids making graven images and likenesses of any thing for worship. This is the one they don't like, because they do like pictures and images in their churches. They say these things wonderfully tend to promote devotion, and so they do away that commandment of God! David says, "I esteem all thy precepts concerning all things to be right." But he was no Roman Catholic.

Well, having got rid of the second, they call the third second, and our fourth they number third, and so on till they come to our tenth, which according to their numbering is the ninth. But,—as they don't like the sound of "the nine commandments," since the Bible speaks of "ten commandments," (Exod. xxxiv. 28; Deut. iv. 13,) and every body has got used to the number ten,—they must contrive to make out ten some how or other. And how do you think they do it? Why, they halve their ninth, and call the first part ninth and the other tenth.

So they make out ten. In the Philadelphia Manual, corrected and approved by the Right Rev. Bishop Kenrick, it is put down thus:—

"9th. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife.

10th. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's goods."

You see they make two of the commandments to relate to coveting. It is not very probable the Lord did so. I reckon they were not so numbered on the tables of stone. But you see it would never do to let that second commandment stand; and it would never do to have less than ten; so they were laid under a sort of necessity to do as they have done. But after all it is a bad job. It is not nearly so ingenious as many of the devices of Popery. After all is said and done, they have but nine commandments; for every body knows that by dividing anything, you get not two wholes but two halves, there is but one whole after the division. And so the ninth commandment is but one commandment after they have divided it. If they were to quarter it they could not make

any more of it. If the Roman Catholics are bent on dividing the last of the commandments, they should call the first half 8½, and the second half 9th. That is what they ought to do. That would be acting honestly, for they know they have left out one of the Lord's ten. They know that the Lord gave ten commandments, and they acknowledge only nine of them. It is a mean device to divide one of the nine, and they say they acknowledge ten. The Roman Catholics know that the commandments, as they are in many of their catechisms, are not as they were written with the finger of God on the tables of stone. They know that one is wanting, and why it is they know. They had better take care how they do such things, for "the Lord is a jealous God."

Indeed the Roman Catholics are sorry for what they have done in this matter. It has turned out a bad speculation. This reduction of the law of God one-tenth, has led to the opening of many eyes. They would never do the like again. And as a proof of their repentance, they have restored the second commandment in many cases; they can show you a great many catechisms and books in which it is found. I had supposed that the omission existed now only in the catechisms published and used in Ireland, until I heard of the Philadelphia Manual. They had better repent thoroughly, and restore the commandment in all their publications. And I think it would not be amiss for them to confess, that for once they have been fallible; that in the matter of mutilating the Decalogue, they could, and did err. If they will afford us that evidence of repentance, we will forgive them, and we will say no more about it. We know it is a sore subject with them; they don't know how to get over it. When one asks them, "How came you to leave out the second commandment?" If they say, "Why, we have not left it out of all our books," the other replies, "But why did you leave it out of any?"—and there the conversation ends. Echo is the only respondent, and she but repeats the question, "Why?"

## 7. Roman Catholic Hostility to the Bible.

I am not surprised that the Roman Catholics dislike the Bible, for very much the same reason that Ahab, king of Israel, disliked Micaiah, the prophet of the Lord. (1 Kings xxii. 8.) It is hard not to contract a strong dislike to that which is for ever bearing testimony against one. To love an enemy is one of the most difficult attainments. Now, the Bible is always speaking against the Roman Catholic religion, and prophesying not good, but evil of it, just as Micaiah did of Ahab. It is natural, therefore, that the Roman Catholics should feel an aversion to the Bible. We ought not to expect any thing else. But I am somewhat surprised, that they do not take more pains to conceal their dislike of it ; for it certainly does not look well, that that which calls itself the church of God should fall out with the oracles of God. It has an ugly appearance, to say the least, to see a professedly Christian church come out against the Christian Scriptures.

I wondered much, when, a few years ago, the Pope issued his encyclical letter, forbidding the use of the Bible in the vulgar tongue. It certainly looks bad, that Christ should say, "Search the Scriptures," and that the vicar of Christ should say, "No, you shall not even *have* them." It has very much the appearance of contradicting Christ: but appearances may deceive in this case, as in that of transubstantiation. But I must do the Pope justice. He does not unconditionally forbid the use of the Bible, but only the use of it in the *vulgar* tongue. The Pope has no objections that a person should have the Bible, provided he has it in a language which he does not understand. The English Roman Catholic may have a French Bible, and the devout Frenchman may make use of an English or Dutch Bible ; or both may have a Latin Bible, provided (I suppose) they have not studied Latin. An acquaintance with the Latin would make it as vulgar a tongue as any other. I have thought it due to the Pope to say thus much in his favour. Far be it from him to forbid the use of the Bible,—except in the vulgar tongue !

Another more recent fact has surprised me not a little—that a student of Maynooth College, in Ireland, named O’Beirne, should have been expelled that institution for persisting in reading the Bible. Expulsion is rather a serious thing. That must be esteemed a heinous crime which is supposed to justify so severe a penalty. I cannot see any thing so criminal in reading the Scriptures. I wonder if the reading of any other book is forbidden at Maynooth:—I suspect not. The authorities at Maynooth must think the Bible the *worst* book in the world. A student of that college may read whatever is most offensive to purity and piety in the ancient classics, without any danger of expulsion; but if he reads the Bible, he is dismissed with dishonour! But I suppose they will say, he was not expelled for reading the Scriptures, but for contempt of authority; in that, after being forbidden to read the Scriptures, he still persisted in reading them. That makes a difference, I must confess: still the young man’s case was a hard one. Christ told him not only to read, but to *search* the the Scriptures: the authorities of the college told him he must not. His sin consisted in obeying Christ rather than the government of the college. I think it might have been set down as *venial*. They might have overlooked the fault of preferring Christ’s authority to theirs.\* “When the Son of man shall come in his glory,” I don’t believe He will *expel* the young man for what he did, though the College bade him “depart.”

I wonder, and have always wondered, that the Roman Catholics, in prohibiting the Scriptures, do not except St. Peter’s Epistles. Was ever any Romanist forbidden to read the letters of a pope? I believe not. But if good Romanists may and should read the “Encyclical

---

\* So, with our Protestant notions, we should naturally think. But no;—by no means: to prefer the authority of Christ to that of the Church, is, in the Church of Rome, the greatest of crimes. It is the root of all Heresy. And burning alive is only a fit punishment for such an offence.—A. S. T.

"Letters" of the Popes, why not let them read the "General Epistles" of the first of Popes, Peter? Why is it more criminal to read the letters of Pope Peter, than those of Pope Gregory? I cannot explain this.

Here is another fact that has surprised me. A recent Galway newspaper denounces, by name, two Protestant clergymen as *reptiles*, and advises that they should be at once trampled on. What for? Why, for the sin of holding a Bible meeting, and distributing the Scriptures; It speaks of them as a hell-inspired junto of incarnate fiends, and says, "If the devil himself came upon earth, he would assume no other garb than that of one of these biblicals." The Irish editor adds, "The biblical junto must be put down in Galway." He is evidently in a passion with the Bible: I suppose it must be because it prophesies no good of him. Certainly he cannot think the Bible very favourable to his religion, otherwise he would not proclaim such a crusade against its distribution. It is the first time I ever heard it asserted, that the managers and members of Bible Societies are *ipso facto* incarnate fiends. It seems singular, that those who promote the circulation of a *heaven-inspired* volume, should be themselves, as a matter of course, *hell-inspired*. I cannot think that Exeter Hall and Chatham-street Chapel become *Pandemoniums* whenever the Bible Society meets in them. Nor shall I believe that Satan is going to turn Bible distributor, until I actually see him "walking about" on this agency.

I do not know how it is, but I cannot help looking on the circulation of the Scriptures as a benevolent business—the gratuitous giving of the word of God to the children of men, as a good work. When recently I read an article stating, that the New-York Young Men's Bible Society had undertaken to supply the emigrants arriving at that port with the Bible in their respective languages, I almost instinctively pronounced it a good work; and I was astonished, as well as grieved, to find that some of the emigrants refused to receive the volume. I suppose

that, if the agent had offered them a volume of the *Spectator*, or a novel, they would have taken that. Any book of man they could have thankfully received; but the book of God they had been instructed to refuse, should that be offered them! The agent reports the following fact: "June 17, visited on their landing, a large number of emigrants from Ireland, not one of whom could be prevailed on to receive a Bible, even as a gift. One of the females told me, If I would give her one, she would take it with her and burn it." Who, do you suppose, put them up to refuse the Bible? And who put it into the head of the woman to speak of *burning* the Bible? I think any person, in whatever part of the country born, could *guess*. I guess it was not any infidel—I guess it was a priest.

But perhaps the reason why they refused the Bibles offered them, was, that they had other and better Bibles? That is not pretended. They had none. Now, it seems to me, they might have accepted our Bibles until they could procure their own better Bibles. An imperfectly translated Bible is better than none: no translation of the Bible was ever so bad as to be worse than no Bible. What if the DOUAY is before all other Bibles, yet king James's may answer one's turn, until he can get the Douay. The Catholics complain, that we give their people an erroneously translated Bible:—why, then, do they not supply them with a correct translation? When they undertake that, we will cease to trouble them. We should be very glad to see every Romanist's family possessing, and capable of reading, the Douay Bible, although it does make repentance towards God to consist in doing penance appointed by men.\* But that they have no idea of doing. Does not the Pope forbid the use of the Bible in the vulgar tongue? I know many Romanists have it, but it is no part of their religion to have a Bible.

---

\*And has many false translations of important passages besides—A. S. T.

They get their Christianity, without the trouble of *searching* the Scriptures. Indeed, they would in vain search in the Scriptures for what they call Christianity. If they were not perfectly conscious, that their religion is not to be found in the Bible, do you suppose they would denounce and persecute that book as they do? Would they direct their inquirers to fathers, and councils, and priests, for information, rather than to prophets, evangelists, and apostles?

8. *Something for the Rev. Mr. H——.*

Mr. H——, the Goliath of the Roman Catholics, seems to be very fond of asking questions which he thinks nobody can answer. I am not acquainted with any writer who makes more frequent use of the interrogation point. But his questions are not quite so unanswerable as he supposes. I will just answer *two* of the string of questions, with which he commences a recent letter to Mr. B——; and then I beg leave to ask a few.

He wants to know, *first*, what the Protestant religion is. He has been often told, but I will tell him again. *It is the religion of the Bible.* It was not called *Protestant* when the Bible was written, for then there was no corruption of Christianity to protest against. But it is the same however called. There it is, *in the Bible.* Read it. Read any part of it. You cannot go amiss to find *the religion of the Reformation* in the Bible. Read particularly the epistle to the Romans, to whom Roman Catholics pretend to refer their origin; or the epistle to the Ephesians. I wonder if a passage from either of these prominent epistles was ever quoted by any one, in proof of any peculiarity of the Roman Catholic church? I suspect never. Protestants, however, make great use of them.

But, says the interrogator, "Tell us what particular doctrines constitute the Protestant religion. Telling us it is the religion of the Bible is telling us *where* it is, but not *what* it is." And is it not enough to tell you *where*

you may find a thing? Have you no eyes? Have you no mind? Do you want one to think for you? \* Is

\* We may answer the above questions by referring to the Creed of Pope Pius IV, as contained in the Bull *Injunctum nobis*, read and published at Rome, December 9th 1564. This Creed is indeed, the solemn oath which is exacted of all priests of the Church of Rome, to secure their "obedience to the Church of Rome." In this, every priest swears:

"I, N. with stedfast faith, believe and confess all and every particular contained in the symbol of faith, which the Holy Roman Church uses," to wit, the Nicene Creed, which is then rehearsed; and so far, so good. But then follows:

"1. The Apostolical and Ecclesiastical Traditions, and the other Observances and Institutions of the same Church, I *most steadfastly* admit and embrace.

"2. I likewise admit the Holy Scripture, according to that sense which our Holy Mother Church has held and does hold, whose province it is to judge of the true sense and interpretation of the sacred Scriptures. Nor will I ever understand or interpret it except according to the unanimous consent of the fathers."

Here let us observe, in the first instance, with how firm a hand the Romish Priest holds fast "The Apostolical and Ecclesiastical Traditions, and the other observances and constitutions" of the Roman Church. These he "*most steadfastly*" admits and embraces: but with what feebleness he only *admits* the Holy Scripture!

Moreover, he will not allow the Holy Scripture to speak for itself—as a book in which he may read, and see, and understand by its own declarations, the glorious and blessed truths which it contains. He will only admit it "*according to that sense which our Holy Mother Church has held and does hold*"!—which sense cannot be ascertained; for the Romish Church has never yet published, nor can she produce, the authentic exposition or interpretation of so much as one chapter of the Bible. And the Priest goes on to swear: Nor will I ever understand or interpret it, *except according to the unanimous consent of the Fathers*:"—and therefore (as it is well known, and undeniable, that this *unanimous consent* has no existence whatsoever) he swears, to all intents and purposes, that he never will understand it or interpret it at all! What is this but confessing and declaring, that he cannot and will not understand it for himself! that he can see, and will see, no truth or meaning in the Scriptures, but with the eyes of others—that is to say, the eyes of the Church and of the Fathers? Now if a man declares that

not that all which Jesus Christ did? He gave the Scriptures to the Jews, and said, "Search them." So we put the Bible into your hand, and say, *There is our religion.* And yet you ask, "Where was your religion before Luther?" Before Luther!—we tell you, Where it was before *the earliest fathers.* It was in the Gospels.

---

he *can* see nothing but with the eyes of others, is not this a plain confession *that he is blind?* And if he *will* see nothing; but with the eyes of others, what does this amount to, but that he is *wilfully blind?* and will not use the faculties which God has given him? He is therefore, on his own showing, and by his own confession, no better than "a blind leader of the blind:" and the Romish Priest binds himself by an oath never to become otherwise! And what must be the end of this? Matt. xv. 14.

This Creed of pope Pius IV. ends thus :

"This true Catholic faith, outside of which no man can be saved, which at present I readily profess and truly hold, I, N., promise, vow, and swear, that I will most steadfastly retain and confess the same entire and undefiled to the last breath of life (with God's help), and that *I will take care, as far as shall be in my power, that it be held, taught, and preached by my subjects, or those whose charge shall devolve on me, in virtue of my office.* So help me God, and these holy Gospels of God."

Thus he binds himself to continue in blindness, and to keep others in blindness to the utmost of his power.

So that a Romanist, so long as he continues a Romanist, and true to the principles of his church, has no eyes to see—no understanding to discern, the spiritual and glorious truths of the Holy Scriptures!

But let *us* note that God, in the Scriptures, *commands us* to search and judge for ourselves. "Search the Scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of Me." John v. 39. Let us, therefore, hear them with our own ears, and read them with our own eyes.

"I speak as to wise men; JUDGE YE what I say" says the Apostle Paul. 1 Cor. x. 15. The noble Bereans did so: "therefore many of them believed." Acts, xvii. 11, 12.

"PROVE ALL THINGS; hold fast that which is good." 1 Thess. v. 21. From all which it appears that Private Judgement is not so much a RIGHT, to be proudly asserted, as a DUTY, to be humbly discharged, in obedience to God, who enjoins this duty in His Holy Word.—A. S. T.

and Epistles, where it is now, and ever will be. What have we to do with Luther or Augustine, or any of them, untill we get as far back into antiquity as St. John?

But Mr. H. asks again, "What society of Christians ever taught this pretended religion of Christ previous to the Reformation?" Why, Mr. H., do not affect such ignorance: you must be *joking*, when you ask such a question. Did you never hear of a society of Christians residing at Rome, some of whom were of Cæsar's household, to whom one Paul wrote a letter which has come down to us? Now, if it cannot be ascertained what that society of Christians "taught," yet it can be easily ascertained what *was taught* them. We have only to read that letter. And I think it not improbable that that society of Christians professed and taught what St. Paul taught them.

But there was another respectable society of Christians, a good while "previous to the reformation," who seem to have known something about this "pretended religion of Christ" called Protestant. They dwelt in a city named Ephesus. That same Paul resided among them three years, preaching the Gospel; and he did it *faithfully*. He "shunned not to declare all the counsel of God." After establishing a flourishing church there, he went away, and subsequently addressed an epistle to them, which also has come down to us. In this epistle it is to be presumed, that he embodied the substance of the Gospel, which he had taught them "publicly, and from house to house." He is not to be suspected of *preaching* one thing and *writing* another. Will Mr. H. deny, that the society of Christians at Ephesus professed and taught the doctrines of the epistle to the Ephesians? I think not. Well, sir, what are the doctrines of that epistle? Are they yours or ours—Romanist or Protestant? I will leave it to any intelligent infidel to decide. Will Mr. H. agree to the reference? Oh no, he wants us to leave it to a pope, and a general council, and the *unanimous fathers*.

I have told Mr. H. now of *two* societies of Christians, who "taught this pretended religion of Christ previous to the Reformation." I could tell of more; but two are enough. He only asked for *one*.

Now I would ask Mr. H., a question. Where was your religion, Mr. H., at the time the Bible was written? I am curious to know. How came the Evangelists and Apostles to know nothing about it, if it is really the religion of Christ? Perhaps Mr. H. can clear up this difficulty. I wish he would, if he can. I do not want him to say where his religion was *after* the Bible was written, and *after* all the Evangelists and Apostles were dead. I am informed on that point. I want to know where the Roman Catholic religion was *before* those good men died; where it was *before the fathers*.

They talk about the *antiquity* of the Roman Catholic religion. It is *old*, I must confess. It bears many marks of age upon it. But the difficulty is, it is *not old enough* by a century or two at least. They say it is the *first* form of Christianity. That is a mistake. It is, at best, only the *second*. The first appeared for a while, then "fled into the wilderness, where she had a place prepared of God," and reappeared at the Reformation. They call it a *new* religion. But no, it is *the old restored*. If any one doubts the *identity* of the *restored* religion, let him but compare its features with that which appeared and flourished in the apostolic age.

Another question I beg leave to ask of Mr. H. "Did the first Christians of Rome hold the doctrines contained in the epistle to the Romans, or did they not?" If they did not, they must have departed from the faith sooner than Paul predicted they would. If they did hold the doctrines of the epistle, then, since these are the very doctrines which the friends of the Reformation contend for, have we not here the example of a society holding the opinions of the Reformation long before the actual era of the Reformation? I have other questions to ask, but I wait for these to be answered.

## 9. *The Distinction of Sins into Mortal and Venial.*

*Mr. Editor,*—I was not aware, until recently, that Roman Catholics of this age, and in this country, make that practical use which I find they do, of the distinction of sins into *mortal* and *venial*. For the truth of the following narrative I can vouch. An intelligent gentleman, being, a few weeks since, expostulated with by a Protestant lady, on his spending the whole of a certain Sabbath in playing cards, replied, with the utmost readiness, and with every appearance of confidence in the validity of his apology, "Oh, that is not a *mortal* sin." Several similar examples of a resort to this distinction were reported to me. Now, can that system be the religion of Jesus Christ, which recognizes this horrible distinction, and puts such a plea as this into the mouth of a transgressor of one of the commandments of that Decalogue which God's own voice articulated, and which his own finger wrote? I cannot express the feelings I have, when I think of the multitudes who are forming a character for eternity under the influence of doctrines like these. What sort of a character must they form!

How completely at variance with the Scriptures is this distinction! "Cursed is every one that continueth not in ALL things which are written in the book of the law to do them:—the wages of sin is death:—the soul that sinneth, it shall die." (Gal. iii. 10; Rom. vi. 23; Ezek. xviii. 4.) Is not all sin disobedience to God? and may He be disobeyed, in any respect, without great guilt? Did ever a father of a family recognize such a distinction in the government of his children? Did Christ atone for what are called venial sins, or did he not? If he did not, then he did not atone for all sin. If he did atone for them, they must be worthy of death, since He died for them.

The truth is, all sin is mortal, if not repented of; and all sin is venial, that is, pardonable, if repented of. There is no sin from which the blood of Christ cannot cleanse. And nothing but *that* can take away any sin.

It is not worth while to reason against such a distinction. I only mention it, as one of the absurd and pernicious errors of the system to which it belongs.

### 10. *The Deadly Sins.*

In "The Christian's Guide to Heaven" I read, with some interest, an enumeration of what the Romanists are pleased to call "the seven deadly sins." Why this distinction, thought I? Are there only seven sins? Or are only *some* sins deadly? and is the number of sins that kill ascertained by the infallible church to be just seven and no more?—all other sins being *venial*, not *mortal*, according to another distinction which that church presumes to make?

They cannot mean that there are only seven sins; for *heresy* is not in this list of sins, and that I am sure they esteem a sin; neither is there any mention of *falsehood* and *deception*, which we Protestants regard as sins, even though their object should be *pious*. Besides, David says, that his iniquities were more than the hairs of his head—consequently many more than seven. And who is any better off than David in this respect? Moreover, even the Roman Catholics admit *nine* commandments. They do not leave out any but the *second*. They must therefore admit the possibility of at least nine sins.

They must mean, that there are only seven sins which are mortal to the soul. But if this be the case, why is it said, "Cursed is every one that continueth not in ALL THINGS written in the book of the law to do them"! It must be admitted, that there are more than seven things written in the book of the law. Again, why is it said that the wages of *sin* is death? This would seem to imply that death is due to every sin, of whatever kind. If there are only seven deadly sins, why does not the Apostles say, "The wages of these seven sins (enumerating them) is death"? But he does not say that. He regarded all sins as deadly—every one of the multitude as mortal in its consequences.

If there are only seven sins which are deadly, then I suppose we can answer for all the rest; but *Job* says he cannot answer Him *one of a thousand*. According to *Job*, then, who is a very ancient authority, there are at least a thousand sins for which we cannot answer.\*

But let us hear what the seven are. They are *Pride, Covetousness, Luxury or Lust, Anger, Gluttony, Envy, Sloth*. Well, these are, to be sure, sins,—all but one of them,—*anger*; which is not necessarily a sin, any more than grief is. We are directed to “be angry and sin not.” I wonder they should have put anger without any qualification among the seven deadly sins. It must be because they are not familiar with the Scriptures. But granting them all to be sins, then certainly they are deadly, since all sin is deadly. We could not therefore object, if it had been said, in reference to them, “seven deadly sins.” But “*the seven deadly sins*” seems to imply that there are no more. We read in the book of Proverbs of *six* things which the Lord doth hate; yea, of seven that are an abomination to him. (Prov. vi. 16-19.) But there is no implication there, that those are the only things which the Lord hates. It is not said, “*the seven things which the Lord doth hate.*” The language which I animadvert upon implies, that the seven sins enumerated are, if not exclusively, yet peculiarly deadly. Now that is not the case. There is nothing in those sins to entitle them to this distinction above other sins. There is no reason why we should be warned to avoid them more than many others.

I am surprised that, in the list of deadly sins, there is no mention of *unbelief*. Now surely that must be a deadly sin, when it is written “he that believeth not shall be damned— shall not see life, but the wrath of

---

\* In this, and in the preceding paragraphs, our author seems to make some confusion between the number of sins (multiplied by repetition), and the number of kinds of sin (differing in their nature); and this weakens this argument.—A. S. T.

God abideth on him.” Moreover, we are told that the Holy Ghost came primarily to reprove the world of unbelief: yet there is no recognition of it among the deadly sins! It is an oversight; which no wonder they fell into, who, in making out their religion, made no use of the word of God

I perceive that neither *heresy* nor *schism* are in the list of deadly sins. I infer, then, that to differ from the Roman church in some particulars, and even to separate from her communion, is not fatal, even she herself being judge. I thank her for the admission.

There is one sin which, in all their catalogues, the Romanists omit; and which, I think, they need to be reminded of. It is the sin of *idolatry*—of worshipping the creature—of paying divine honours to something else besides God. It used to be very deadly, under the Jewish dispensation. It doubtless is equally so under the Christian. They had better beware of it. They had better leave off praying to saints, and honoring the Virgin Mary above her Son, lest perchance this prove to be a deadly sin.

---

### 11. *Infallibility.*

Every body knows that the Church of Rome lays claim to infallibility. She contends that there is *no mistake* about her; that she *cannot* err. Now this very modest claim of our sister of Rome (for, in the matter of churches, I reject the relation of mother and daughter).\* I am constrained to question it; and that for such reasons as the following:—

---

\* And I suppose that (if the matter be carefully considered and truly stated,) we can no more consider the Church of Rome as our sister than as our mother. If she be a sister, she is a most grievously erring sister, and certainly her conduct to us has ever been anything but sisterly, or motherly either.

A. S. T.

1.—She cannot herself tell us where her infallibility is to be found. She is sure that she has it somewhere about her, but for the life of her she cannot tell where. Some of her writers say that it is with the Pope. Others contend that it resides in General Council. And another opinion is, that both the Pope and a Council are necessary to it. Now I think they ought to settle it among themselves *who* is infallible, before they require us to believe that *any one* is. Let them *find* infallibility, and *fix* it. After that it will be time enough for us to think of admitting its existence. But,

2.—We will suppose that it is the Pope who is infallible—each successive Pope. Well, where did they get their infallibility? Why say they, it was transmitted from St. Peter, to be sure. Christ gave it to him, and he handed it down. But was Peter infallible? There was a day when I suspect he did not think himself infallible—when, smitten to the heart by the reproof of his Lord, he went out and wept bitterly. (Luke xxii. 61-62.) There is no doubt that he made a *mistake*, when he so confidently pronounced, “Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee;” (Matt. xxvi. 35.)—and let it be remembered that this was after Christ had said, “Thou art Peter, and on this rock,” &c. (Matt. xvi. 18.)

If Peter was infallible, I wonder he did not at once settle the difficulty of which we have an account in Acts xv. Why was the matter suffered to be debated, in the presence of his infallibility? It seems that Peter, on that occasion, claimed no *préeminence*. Nor was any particular deference paid to him by the council. He related his *experience*, precisely as did Paul and Barnabas. James seems to have been *in the chair* on that occasion. He speaks much more like an infallible person than any of the rest. He says, “Wherefore my sentence is,” &c. What a pity it is for the church of Rome, that Peter did not say that instead of James! We should never have heard the last of it. But it was

the bishop of Jerusalem, and not the bishop of Rome, who said it. It cannot be helped now. Will my Roman Catholic brother take down his *Douay Bible*, and read that chapter?

But again, if Peter was infallible, I am surprised that Paul "*withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed.*" (Gal. ii. 11.) Was that the way to treat a Pope? But Paul had always something of the Protestant about him. And yet Peter did not resent Paul's treatment of him; for in his second Epistle he speaks of him as "our beloved brother Paul." I suppose, that Peter himself did not know that he was infallible. Men do not always know themselves.

Once more, if the superiority among the disciples belonged to Peter, it has struck me as strange, that, when a dispute arose among them who should be greatest, our Saviour did not take Peter, instead of a little child, "and set *him* in the midst of them," and remind the others, that the *supremacy* had been given to him. I think the other Apostles could not have understood Christ in that declaration, "Thou art Peter," &c., as the church of Rome now understands Him; otherwise the dispute about superiority could never have arisen.

Now, according to the Romish doctrine, Peter being infallible, each successive Pope inherits his infallibility; and therefore never a man of them could err in a matter of faith—nor even the *woman* Joan,—(for in the long list of *Papas*, there was by accident, in the ninth century, one *Mama*; though this, I am aware, is denied by some,)—even she retained none of the frailty of her sex.

It is well for the church of Rome, that she does not contend, that her popes are infallible in *practice*; for if she did, she would find some difficulty in reconciling that doctrine with history. It is very true that one may err in *practice*, and not in *faith*. Nevertheless, when I see a man very *crooked* in practice, I cannot believe that he is always exactly *straight* in doctrine. I cannot be-

lieve, that all I hear from him is good and true, when what I see in him is false and bad. Take for example such a one as Pope Alexander sixth ; when he, the father of such a hopeful youth as *Cæsar Borgia*, and the chief of ecclesiastics too, tells me, with a grave air and solemn tone, that it is a shocking, wicked thing for an ecclesiastic to marry, I cannot help demurring somewhat to the statement of Cæsar's father. But I must proceed with my reasons.

3.—If a man says one thing one day, and the next day says another thing quite contrary to it, I am of opinion that he is, on one of those days, in error. But what has this to do with the business in hand? Have not the Popes always pronounced the same thing? Have *they* ever contradicted each other? Ask rather, whether the wind has always, ever since there was a wind, blown from the same quarter. Now here is a reason why I cannot allow infallibility to belong to either *popes* or *councils*.

4.—I would ask, just for information, how it was, when there were *three* contemporary Popes, each claiming infallibility. Had they it between them? or which of them had it? What was the name of the one about whom there was *no mistake*? How were the common people to ascertain the infallible one?—for you know, that their salvation depended on their being in communion with the true Bishop of Rome, the rightful successor of St. Peter.

5.—The more common opinion among the Romanists is, I believe, that the infallibility resides in a Pope and General Council together. Each is fallible by itself; but putting the two together, they are infallible! Now I admit, that, in some languages, two negatives are equivalent to an affirmative; but I do not believe, that two fallibles ever were, or ever will be, equivalent to an infallible. It is like saying, that *two wrongs make a right*.

## 12. *A Religion without a Holy Spirit.*

A gentleman of intelligence, who was born of Roman Catholic parents, and educated in the Romish church, but left it recently for Protestantism—(for some do leave the Roman for the Protestant church—the conversions are not all to Romanism; but we, Protestants, don't make such a noise about it when we receive a convert; and I suppose the reason is, that it is really no wonder that a Roman Catholic should become a Protestant—the only wonder is, that any should remain Roman Catholics)—this gentleman said to his brother, who is still a Romanist, "Why, brother, as long as I was a Roman Catholic, I never knew that there was a Holy Spirit."

And what do you think was the brother's reply? "Well, I don't know that there is one now!"

The narration of what passed between these two men struck me with great force. A religion without a Holy Spirit!—and this the religion, according to the computation of Bishop England, of *two hundred millions* of mankind! It made me sorry. My religion, thought I, would be very imperfect without the Holy Spirit. I want a Sanctifier, as well as a Surety, I want one to act internally *upon* me, as well as one to act externally *for* me. What should I do with my *title* to heaven, without a *fitness* for it? As a sinner, I am equally destitute of both. There can be no heaven without holiness. And whence can any man have holiness, but from the Holy Spirit? And is it likely that He will act where He is not acknowledged? If priests can *pardon*, as they say, yet can they also *purify*?

Here were two men, educated in the Roman Catholic religion, and attending weekly the Roman Catholic church, and yet never having heard of the Holy Spirit! They had heard often enough of the Virgin Mary, and of this saint, and that saint: but never a word of the Holy Spirit, the Divine Sanctifier! But was it not their own fault? Is not the doctrine of the Trinity a part of the Roman Catholic faith? It is: but that may be, and yet the priests may never instruct the people in the

character and office of the Holy Spirit, and in the necessity of His operations.

But had these men never been present at a baptism, when *water*, according to Christ's direction, with *oil*, *spittle*, &c. as the Romish Church directs, is applied to the body, and the name of each person of the Trinity is mentioned? Yes, but, poor men, they had never studied Latin. How should they know what *Spiritus Sanctus* means, when they hear it? Why should all the world be presumed to understand Latin? Oh, why should the worship of the living God be conducted in a dead language? But this is by the way.

These men knew not that there was a Holy Spirit. Why did they not know it? I will tell you. Because so little is said of the Holy Spirit among the Roman Catholics—there is so little need of any such agent, according to their system! They do not believe in the necessity of a change of heart. Why should there be a Holy Spirit? The priest does not want any such help to prepare a soul for heaven. *The Roman Catholic system is complete without a Holy Spirit.* Therefore nothing is said of Him in the pulpit, or in the confession-box; and the sinner is not directed to seek his influences, or to rely on his aid. If I misrepresent, let it be shown, and I will retract. But, if I am correct in the statement I make, look at it. Protestant, look at it—a religion without a Holy Spirit! Roman Catholic, look at it, and obey the voice from heaven, which says, "Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not of her plagues." (Rev. xviii. 4.) This is one of her capital crimes. She does not speak *against* the Holy Ghost. No, she is *silent* about Him! \*

---

\* The truth is, that the Romish Church puts the Church, with its rites and ceremonies and observances,—its devices and its penances,—in the place which the Scriptures assign to the Holy Ghost.

A. S. T.

### 13. *The Keys.*

The Catholics—by which I mean *Roman* Catholics, since, though a Protestant, I believe in the Holy Catholic, that is, *universal* church, and profess to be a member of it, at the same time that I waive all pretensions to being a Roman Catholic,—they make a great noise about the keys having been given to Peter; the keys of the kingdom of heaven. Well, it is true enough—they were given to him. The Bible says so, and we Protestants want no better authority than the Bible for anything. We do not require the confirmation of tradition, and the unanimous consent of the fathers. We do not want anything to strengthen “Thus saith the Lord.” Yes, the keys were given to Peter: it is said so in Matthew xvi. 19. This is one of those passages of Scripture which is *not* hard to be understood, as even they of Rome acknowledge. I am glad our brethren\* of that communion agree with us, that there is *something* plain in the Bible; that there is one passage, at least, in which private interpretation arrives at the same result, which they reach who follow in the track of the agreeing fathers! I suppose, if we could interpret all Scripture as much to the mind of Romanists as we do this, they would let us alone about private interpretation.

Well, Peter has got the keys. What then? What are keys for? To unlock and open is one of the purposes served by keys. It was for this purpose, I suppose, that Peter received them; and for this purpose

---

\* In the sense in which all men are brethren (that is, all being descended from fallen Adam) we may call Romanists our brethren; but in the high and sacred sense in which the word Brethren is used in the Scriptures—as in Acts xv. 40; xvi. 2, 40; xxi. 7, 17; Rom. viii. 29; Eph. vi. 23; 1 Peter i. 22, 23; 1 John iii. 14,—we cannot acknowledge them as Brethren. For, if we are Christians, they are not; “for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness? and what agreement hath the temple of God with idols?” (2 Cor. vi. 14—18; Rev. xviii. 4, 5).

we find him using them. He opened the kingdom of heaven, that is, the Gospel Church, or Christian dispensation, as the phrase "kingdom of heaven" often signifies. He opened it to both Jews and Gentiles : he preached the first sermon, and was the instrument of making the first converts among each. With one key he opened the kingdom of heaven to the Jews, and with the other to the Gentiles. This was a distinction conferred on Peter it is true : but it was necessary, that some one of the twelve should *begin* the business of preaching the Gospel. The whole twelve could not turn the keys at once, and open the door. The power of *binding* and *loosing*, which was conferred on Peter when the keys were given him, was not confined to him, but, as Matthew testifies in the next chapter but one, was extended to all the disciples. [Compare Matt. xvi. 19 with Matt. xviii. 18.]

Well, Peter opened the kingdom of heaven ; and what became of the keys then ? Why, there being no farther use for them, they were, in that sense, laid aside. I don't know what has become of them, for my part. When a key has opened a door which is not to be shut again, there being no more use for the key, it does not matter much what becomes of it. Hence, in the history of the Acts of the Apostles, we hear no more about the keys ; and Peter, in his Epistles, says never a word about them. He wrote his second Epistle to put Christians in remembrance ; but I don't find him reminding them of the keys. The truth is, having used them for the purpose for which they were given him, he had, after that, no more concern about them.

But many fancy that Peter kept these keys all his life, and then transmitted them to another, and he to a third, and so from hand to hand they have come along down, till the Pope at Rome has them now. And they say, that these keys signify the authority given to the church, and especially to the Popes. But I find no Bible warrant for this assertion. Christ does not say, that He gave the keys to Peter to give to somebody else ; and Peter does not say, that he gave them to any

body else ; and nobody since Peter has been able to produce the keys. This settles the matter in my mind. I want to know where the keys are.

But some suppose, that Peter took them to heaven with him, and that he stands with them at the gate of heaven, as porter, to admit and keep out whom he will. But this notion does not tally very well with certain passages of Scriptures. Christ tells his disciples, that He goes to prepare a place for them, and that He will come again and receive them unto himself : (John xiv. 3). *He* will do it. He will not trust the business to Peter. "He that hath the key of David, he that openeth and no man shutteth, and shutteth, and no man openeth," is not Peter, but Christ. (Rev. iii. 7).

But the Romanists will have it, that Peter is the one ; and he having the keys, they think that *they* will all be admitted, while not a soul of us, poor Protestants, will. They may be mistaken, however. I do not know what right they have to put in an exclusive claim to Peter. I see no resemblance between Peter and a Roman Catholic—none in the world. I never care to see a truer and better Protestant than I take him to be. But, if he does stand at the gate of heaven, with such authority as the Romanists ascribe to him, yet I suppose he will not deny that he wrote the Epistles called his. Well, then, if he shall hesitate to admit Protestants, we shall only have to remind him of his Epistles. He does not say anything in them about his being POPE. No, he says, "The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder." Not a word says he about the Mass, or the Seven Sacraments, or Transubstantiation. Let the reader turn to his Epistles, and see just what he does say ; I think he will not find anything in those Epistles to frighten Protestants.

But there is still another supposition, viz. that Peter is not perpetual porter of heaven ; but each Pope, as he dies, succeeds to that office—one relieving another. I do not know how it is : but I judge, if all the Popes have been in their day porters of Paradise, many of them must have tended *outside*. They have not been univer-

sally the best of men, I think history informs us. But I will not mention any names.\*

---

#### 14. *The Head of the Church.*

The Church is represented in the Scriptures as a *body*. Of course, therefore, it must have a *head*; and that same blessed book tells us who the head is. And who, think you, is the head of the church? Who but *Christ* himself? Who else is fit to be its head—its source of influence and government? I will produce the passages of Scripture in proof of Christ's headship presently.

But the Roman Catholics say that the Pope is the head of the church. Ah, is he? Where is the proof that he is? Now there is nothing which irritates a Roman Catholic so soon, as to ask him for *proof*. "Proof, indeed!" he says; "do you ask proof of an infallible church? What is the use of infallibility, if we must prove everything? These are truly most degenerate days. The time was when nobody demanded proof; but now every little sprig of a Protestant must have *reasons* to support assertions! He calls for proof. And he must have it from the Bible. He will not believe anything in religion, unless some text can be cited in support of it. Things have come to a pretty pass, indeed." It is even so. We plead guilty to the charge. For everything alleged to be a doctrine of Christianity, we confess we do require some proof out of the writings of some Evangelist or Apostle. And, since our Roman Catholic brethren will not gratify us by adducing the scriptural warrant for believing the Pope or Bishop of Rome to be the head of the church, we will do them the favor of consulting the Scriptures for them. Well, we

---

\* Besides which, we all know, from the Scriptures, that Peter was at Antioch (Gal. ii. 11—16); but it does not appear from the Scriptures, that he ever was at Rome. How then came it to pass, that (supposing he left the keys to any particular Church) he did not leave them to the Bishop of Antioch, rather than to the Bishop of Rome?

begin with Genesis, and we go through to Revelation, searching all the way for some proof that the Pope is the head of the church. But so far are we from finding any evidence that he is the head of the church, that we find not a particle of proof that he is *that* or anything. We find no account of any such character as a Pope—not a word about him.\* The subject of the proposition, that is, the Pope, [in their view of him] does not seem to be known to that book at all. I really do not wonder that it frets a Romanist, when we send him to the Bible for proof that the Pope is the head of the Church.

But though we discover nothing in the Bible about a Pope, yet we find much about the Head of the Church. In Ephesians i. 22, 23, Christ is said to be “the Head over all things to the church, which is his body.” Now if the church be *his* body, surely He must be the Head of it, as well as Head over all things to it. Will any one say that the Pope of Rome is the head of *Christ’s* body? That is shocking. And yet the Romanists are told they *must* believe it; and, seeing they cannot help it, they do somehow or other contrive to believe it. In Eph. v. 23, it is explicitly declared, that “Christ is the Head of the church.” The same is repeated, Col. i. 18.—“He (Christ) is the Head of the body, the church.”

Our brethren of the Roman Catholic church have long been in the habit of asking, where our religion was before the Reformation? They may see where one doctrine of it was, fifteen hundred years before the Reformation. One would suppose, from the way they talk, that they supposed the Bible was written a considerable time after the Reformation, and that it was then

---

\* Except indeed the description of the “Man of Sin,” the “Son of Perdition,” which we read in 2 Thess. ii. 3—12, and the account of the “Image of the Beast,” which is given in Rev. xiii. 14—18; which passages are thought by very many, and with at least very great appearance of reason, to be prophetic descriptions of the Pope. To my mind the description is too plain to be mistaken. So that though the Pope is not named in the Scriptures, his picture is very plainly drawn in them. But how far this will help their cause, I leave to the Romanists to determine.

got up to support the Protestant heresy! I might ask them, where their doctrine of the Pope's headship of the church was, when the New Testament was written? *i.e.* some seventeen hundred and fifty or eighteen hundred years ago. But I will withdraw the question: it may seem unkind to press it.

Now, since the Bible says, that Christ is the head of the church, if the Pope is so also, there must be *two* heads of the church. But there is only *one* body: why should there be two heads? Is the church a *monster*? Besides, if there had been another head, Christ would have been spoken of in the Scriptures, as one of the heads of the church, or as *a* head of the church. But He is called *the* Head of the church. The article is definite, denoting only one. There is not a syllable in the Bible about another head; indeed, the language of the Bible does not admit of there being another. Yet Roman Catholics say there is another; and it is their Pope. "Christ being absent," they say, "it is necessary there should be a visible human head to represent him on earth." Now the Pope, they say, is this *visible* head of the church—the head that you can *see*. But is their assumption correct, that Christ is absent? Is he absent? Hear His own words: "Lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world." "Where two or three are gathered together in My Name, there am I in the midst of them." Was He absent from Paul? He says, "I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me." A *visible* head! What do we want with a visible head? Of what use to us—the part of the body here—is a head a long way off at Rome? It is no better than a *caput mortuum* to us.

But what if we admit the possibility of a visible human head of the church, who made the Pope that head? Did he inherit this also from St. Peter? Was Peter head of the church? He, more modest than his pretended successors, does not anywhere claim that title. I know the Roman Catholics hold him to be the *rock*—the *foundation* of the church: but I really did not know that they regarded him—whom, however, they exalt, they

still consider but as a mere man—as capable of being *head* of the church too. It is not too much to speak of Christ as both the foundation and head of the church ; but to speak of Peter, *poor* Peter, as we are accustomed to call him when we think of the fact of his denial of Christ, as both foundation and head of the church, is really carrying the matter rather too far. How little Peter thought he was *both*, when “he went out, and wept bitterly !” How little he knew of himself !

The Pope the head of the church ! Then the church is the Pope’s body !! Alas for the church !!!

---

### 15. *The Power to Forgive Sins.*

*Seculum modestum*, I rather suppose, will not be the designation by which the 19th century will be distinguished in history from her sister centuries. I know not whether any age has been more remarkable for cases of unfounded *pretension* than the present. The case, however, of which I am to take notice, did not originate in the 19th century. It has existed many hundred years. I do not wonder at its surviving the dark ages, but that it should have lived so far into the luminous 19th does somewhat surprise me. The pretension to which I allude is that made by the Roman Catholic priesthood. What do you think it is which they *pretend* they can do? *Forgive sins*. They *pretend* that they have power over sins, to remit or retain them. They *claim* that the prerogative of pardon is lodged with them. And that is the reason why they receive confessions. Confession to a priest would be a farce, if it was not thought that he could forgive sins.

The first thing that strikes me is the contrariety of this notion to common sense. The idea of being pardoned by any other than the being offended, seems absurd. What! a fellow-sinner pardon sins against God! It is as if, of *two* debtors, one should play the creditor and forgive the other his debt. That would be a strange way of getting rid of debts. I always thought he to

whom the debt is due ought to have a voice in the matter of remitting it. If I had disposed of a debt in that manner, I should always be afraid that it would some day or other be exacted—that the real creditor would appear and make his demand. Then it would be a poor excuse for me to say, that my fellow-debtor forgave me the debt. I will tell you what I expect. I expect that a great deal which the priests forgive will be exacted notwithstanding. Romanists talk of going to the priest, and getting their *old scores wiped off*; just as if it were but a *slate and pencil* memorandum, which any one can rub out. The sin of man is not thus recorded. It is “written with a pen of iron, and with the point of a diamond.” Jer. xvii. 1. It is not so easily obliterated.

But is there not Scripture in support of the priest’s claim? See John xx. 23. Does not Christ say to his disciples. “Whosoever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whosoever sins ye retain, they are retained?” Yes, he says that to *his Disciples—the Apostles*. But pray what right have the priests to found a claim of theirs on a grant made to the Apostles? They do indeed *come after* the Apostles, but they are their *successors* in no other sense. I should like to know how the priests *prove* that they inherit the apostolical power of remitting sins. But I forget; they scorn a resort to *proof*.

The power communicated in that grant to the Apostles was merely *ministerial* and *declarative*. It was no less true after than before that grant was made, that none can forgive sins but God only. That the power was *declarative* merely—that is, that the Apostles were empowered to remit and retain sins, only as they were authorized and enabled to make a correct statement to mankind of the way and means of salvation, to express the conditions of pardon and condemnation, and to propose the terms of life and death—is clear to me from the fact, that the conferring of it was immediately preceded by the Saviour’s breathing on them, and saying, “Receive ye the Holy Ghost.” Now this communication of the Spirit qualified them for the *declarative* remission and retention of sins. Digitized by Google They were thereby

inspired to pronounce, on what grounds sins are remitted and retained by God. \*

This was the power over sins granted to the Apostles ; and I shall show presently, that this *declarative* power is all they pretend ever to have exercised. Now, the priests have no right to claim even this power, except in that subordinate sense in which it is possessed by all who are authorized to preach the Gospel. Did Christ ever

\* Can the Romanists produce a single instance from any part of the New Testament, in which there is any appearance even of an Apostle (or any one else) requiring or receiving Confession, and pronouncing or giving Forgiveness of Sins, *in the Romish sense*? The Apostles preached the Gospel: they pointed out the only way of Salvation: they testified, according to Mark xvi. 15, 16, that he who believed and was baptized would be saved, but that he who believed not would be damned: they declared what were the works of the flesh and what were the fruits of the Spirit, (Gal. v. 16—25): they warned men to examine themselves, whether they be in the faith, (2 Cor. xiii. 5): and they have given us abundance of rules and tests, by the faithful application of which we may discern between the children of God and the children of the devil, (1 John iii. 8—10.) The whole of that first Epistle of John is little else than a series and collection of such tests. All this the Apostles did; and they are their true successors who herein follow *their* example. The Apostles never offered to remit or retain sins in any other way. When Protestants maintain that “Almighty God, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ \* \* \* hath given power and commandment to his Ministers *to declare and pronounce* to his people *being penitent*, the Absolution and Remission of their sins,” and thereupon do testify, that “He pardoneth and absolveth all them that truly repent and unfeignedly believe His holy Gospel,”—*then* they faithfully follow the example of the Apostles; they remit the sins of all them that truly repent, and unfeignedly believe the holy Gospel, and they retain the sins of all who refuse to repent and believe. It remains for every one who hears their faithful declarations of Divine truth, to ascertain by Scriptural self-examination, whether he does or does not truly repent and believe. He who, instead of pursuing this Scriptural course, and obeying the Divine command, (2 Cor. xiii. 5.) relies on the Absolution pronounced by a sinful man presumptuously assuming to himself the prerogative of Christ, (Acts v. 31.) may fitly be called upon to show, wherein he is better than a madman on the one hand, and a rebel against God’s commandment on the other.—A. S. T.

breathe on them, and say to them, "Receive ye the Holy Ghost," that they should claim equality with the Apostles? The effect of the *inspiration* is not so manifest in the case of the priests as it was in the case of the Apostles, if I may be permitted to express an opinion.

But the priests claim far more than ever entered the thoughts of the Apostles. They are not satisfied with the ministerial and declarative power over sins. They claim a *magisterial* and *authoritative* power to remit or retain them. Consequently they call sinners to come and confess their sins to them. Did Peter and the other Apostles, the very men to whom Christ said, "whosoever sins ye remit, &c." ever do such a thing? You read in the Acts of the Apostles of *synagogues* and *proseuches*, or places of prayer; but do you find anything about *confession-boxes* there? Does there seem to have been anything *auricular* in the transactions of the day of Pentecost?

There is the case of *Simon Magus* that strikes me as in point. If Peter and John had had the power of forgiving sin, could they not have exercised it in favour of Simon? But we find Peter addressing him just as any Protestant Minister would have done: "Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee." How differently the Roman priest would have acted! He would have said, "Well, Simon, and what have you to say for yourself? Ah, that is very bad, very bad. But if you are sorry, Simon, I forgive you. Only I cannot let you off without doing some penance. You must say so many *paternosters*, and you must not eat meat for so many days." This is the way in which the boasted successors of Peter manage these matters. But they will say, Simon was not penitent, otherwise perhaps Peter would have pardoned him. But I wonder if pardon would have waited for Peter's action in the matter. I suspect not. I suspect the gracious Lord, when he sees contrition in any soul, does not withhold pardon till a priest, or even an Apostle, shall intervene and act in the matter. And, when the good angels have ascer-

tained that a sinner has repented, I rather suppose, that they do not suspend their rejoicing until he has gone to confession, and has got absolution from the priest.

What a glorious book the Bible is ! I wish the authorities of the Roman Catholic church would condescend to strike it off the list of prohibited books, and allow the Lord to speak to his creatures. I wish they would let their people, the many thousands that on the Sabbath crowd their chapels and cathedrals, read, or hear, what Jehovah says to "every one" in that wonderful chapter, the 55th of Isaiah. It is indeed a wonderful chapter. But the Roman Catholics don't know any thing about it. No ; and they have never heard of that precious and glorious verse, the 18th of the 1st chapter of Isaiah, in which the Lord saith to the sinner, "Come now, and let us" (you and I sinner !) "reason together." And then follows the reasoning ; "though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow ; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool." Ask the awakened sinner, or the recently pardoned, what he would take for that passage. He esteems it above all price ; and to the Christian it becomes every day more and more a theme of wonder and delight. But the Roman Catholics don't know that the Lord has ever made any such kind and condescending proposal to his creatures. They never hear of the call of God, to come and reason with Him. The only "come" they hear is the priest's call. I pity them.

But it is no wonder that the priests treat the people as they do ; for if they allowed them to know what the Lord says to them, they would be very apt to go directly to God in Christ, and leave the priest out of the question. And then, Where would be the *importance* of the priest ? and his *emolument*, where ?

---

#### 16. *A Roman Catholic Book Reviewed.*

I happened to lay my hand the other day on a little book entitled, "The Christian's Guide to Heaven, a Manual for Catholics," to which were appended some

hymns. The book was published in Baltimore by a respectable Roman Catholic bookseller, and under the sanction of the Archbishop. Well, said I to myself, this is good authority. I will look into this book. I know what Protestants say of Roman Catholics. I will see now what Roman Catholics say of themselves. Men cannot complain when we take their own account of themselves; and I like the way of judging people out of their own mouths, because it shuts their mouths so far as reply is concerned. I resolved that I would compare the statements and doctrines of this book, professing to be a guide to heaven, with the statements and doctrines of that bigger book which is the Protestant's guide to heaven. You will know that I mean the Bible. That is our manual,—the guide which we consult and follow. However, if a book agrees with the Bible, that is enough.

So I began to read; and one of the first things that I came to was, "Conditions of plenary indulgences." Indulgences! thought I. What does a Christian want with indulgences? He is apt enough to indulge himself. And how are indulgences to help him to heaven? I should rather pronounce self-denial the road. Indulgences, not *partial* but *plenary*! I should think plenary indulgence, on any condition, was enough to ruin one. If by indulgence the Roman Catholics mean pardon, they have chosen an unfortunate way to express it. Why not say *full pardon*, instead of plenary indulgence? But I suppose pardon expresses what God exercises, and indulgence what the church grants. I should like to know, however, what right the church has to grant any thing of the kind.

Well, the conditions enumerated were four. I took note only of the first, which was in these words: "To confess their sins with a sincere repentance to a priest approved by the bishop." This begins very well, and goes on well for a time. Confession of sin, with sincere repentance, is truly the way to pardon. "If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins." But what a pity the condition did not stop there; or if

any thing was added in regard to the object of the confession, that it did not designate God as the being to whom the sins should be confessed. The sins are all *done* against Him, and why should they not be *told* to Him? I cannot get rid of the notion, that we ought to confess all our sins to God alone, the being whom we have offended by them. But no, says this guide to heaven, the confession must be made to a priest; it is good for nothing without it. If the publican, of whom we read, had lived now, it would have been quite irregular, according to the Roman Catholic notion, that he should have gone down to his house justified, when he confessed only to God. And the penitent must take care what sort of a priest it is to whom he confesses, else he might as well remain impenitent. It must be a priest *approved by the bishop*. Well, now, this is very strange, that our pardon should be suspended on such a condition—that angels, in other words, must wait before they express any joy that a sinner has repented, until he has gone and told his sins to a priest approved by a bishop! Who suspended it there, I wonder? Not Isaiah. Read his 55th chapter. Not Peter, nor Solomon, nor John, nor Paul. Read them and see. There is not a word in the Bible about confessing to a priest. So I found that the two guides did not agree in this matter. “The Catholic Manual” said, the confession must be made to a priest; but the Holy Scriptures insist on no such thing, but direct, that the confession be made to God.

This thought occurred to me: What if a sinner confess his sins with sincere repentance, though not to a priest, what is to be done with his soul? Must pardon be denied him, and must he be consigned to perdition, because, though he confessed penitently, yet he did not do so to a priest? Really this is making rather too much of the priest. I do not believe that our salvation is so dependent on the deference we pay to the priest.

Before the conditions, on one of which I have been remarking, are mentioned, there is this general statement: “Plenary indulgences granted to the faithful throughout these States *at the following times* ;” then and

follows a specification of *nine* different seasons when plenary indulgences may be had. I did not know before that pardons were confined to any set times ; I always supposed, that they might be had summer and winter, night and day, and at any hour of either—in short, whenever a penitent heart breathes its desire to God. My mistake must have arisen from the fact, that I have been in the habit of consulting the Bible on these matters. I never saw “The Christian’s Guide to Heaven” before in my life. I have always used the Bible as a guide.

Now that I am on the subject of confession, I may as well make another reference to the Manual. There is an article or chapter headed “The Confiteor.” In it, the person wishing to be guided to heaven makes this confession, from which it will appear that Roman Catholics do not confine their confessions to the priest, but extend them to many other beings : “I confess to Almighty God, to blessed Mary, ever virgin, to blessed Michael the archangel, to blessed John the Baptist, to the holy apostles Peter and Paul, and to all the saints, that I have sinned.” Now, I do not see the use of naming so many. The confession, I think, should have stopped with the first mentioned—Almighty God. What have the rest to do with it ? How is it any business of theirs ? The person has not sinned against them. Surely every sinner may say to God. “Against thee, thee *ONLY* have I sinned,” since David could. (Psalm li. 4). Besides, this coupling of these creatures with the Creator, as worthy equally with Himself to receive our confessions of sin, savours strongly of idolatry. Confession is made to them on the same principle that prayer is. Each is an act of worship—one of those things which should be confined exclusively to God. I wonder that Romanists will not be satisfied with one great and glorious object of worship, God, the Father, Son, and Spirit. Why will they, in their devotions, associate creatures with the Creator ? The book I am reviewing contains numerous and very offensive examples of it. I shall continue the review in my next.

17. *The Review of the Catholic Book, continued.*

The next thing that struck me as worthy of notice in the perusal of the book was this—that the devout Roman Catholic is represented as making the following solemn declaration concerning the Holy Scriptures: “Neither will I ever take and interpret them otherwise than according to the unanimous consent of the fathers.” I smiled when I read this, and I thought within myself, if that is his determination, he will not be likely ever to take them at all. What an intention is this, which the Roman Catholic expresses—never to attach any meaning to a passage which he may read in the Bible, until he has first ascertained *whether* certain ancient persons called the Fathers all agreed in any interpretation of it; and if so, what that interpretation is! What should give such authority and weight to the interpretation of the fathers? Why cannot we ascertain what the Bible means as well as they could? What helps had they which we have not? and why require that they be unanimous? What a roundabout method this of finding out what a book means! *First*, the reader has to ascertain who are entitled to be called *fathers*. He must make out a list of them all. If one is overlooked, it vitiates the interpretation, though all the rest should agree in it. But supposing him to have a catalogue of the whole number from Barnabas to Bernard, the *next* step in the process is, to ascertain how they all interpreted the Bible. For this purpose he must pore over their works. But some of them left no works behind them. How shall he ever find out, what *they* thought of this and that passage of Scripture? And yet he must somehow or other ascertain *their* opinions; else how can he compare them with the opinions of the other fathers, and discover their agreement with them? For you will remember, that the consent must be *unanimous*. Others of the fathers left works behind them, but they have not come down to us. How shall the reader of

the Bible know, what those lost works contained? Yet he must know what *they* thought, else how can he be sure, that they thought in accordance with the views of those fathers whose works are preserved to us. I cannot see how this difficulty is to be got over, for my part. It is altogether beyond me. But, supposing it to be surmounted, there remains the task of comparing the opinions of all these Greek and Latin fathers, to the number of a hundred or two, one with another, to see if they all agree; for the consent you see must be unanimous. Those parts of Scripture in the interpretation of which they did not agree, are to go for nothing. Indeed, if ninety-nine should be found to accord in a particular interpretation, it must be rejected, if the hundredth father had a different opinion of its meaning. I cannot help thinking, that it is the better, as certainly it is the shorter and easier method, just for every one to take up and "search the Scriptures," and "if any of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all men liberally." (Jas. i. 5.)

As the case is, I do not wonder that Roman Catholics do not read the Bible. They have not come to that yet. They are still among the fathers, searching out and comparing their opinions, so as to know how to *take* the Bible. By-and-by, if they live long enough, when they have ascertained what the fathers agreed on, they may go to reading the Scriptures.\*

---

\* By way of illustrating the confusion into which the poor Romanist is plunged by this rule, I need only refer to the different interpretations given by different fathers of that passage in Matt. xvi. 18, on which the Romanists lay so much stress, and which indeed with them involves a fundamental point. "And I say unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my Church." It is rather awkward for them that *this* is one of the passages, which a Romanist must not presume to understand or interpret; for the most eminent fathers are at hopeless variance in their interpretations of it. Chrysostom understands by the Rock, the confession of Christ which Peter had just made; Jerome, Christ Himself; Cyril of Alexandria, Athanasius, Ambrose, Hilary, agree with Chry-

It seems odd that one cannot, without mortal sin, attach a meaning to such a passage as John iii. 16: "God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life," until he has first ascertained what Cyprian, Jerome, Hilary, both the Gregorys, and indeed all the fathers thought of it, and whether they agreed in their interpretation of it. How any one can read it, without understanding it in spite of

---

sostom; Augustine interprets it sometimes one way, and sometimes another, and leaves the question doubtful; Origen thinks that it applies just as much to the rest of the Apostles as to Peter. But in regard to the Article of the Creed of Pius IV., quoted in the text, the reader is referred to the Note in pages 22 and 23, in which the first and second Articles of the Unapostolical Creed of Pope Pius IV, are quoted at full: from the examination of which it is there shown, that the Romish Priests and Ecclesiastics—who are bound by solemn oath to "retain and confess" the "true Catholic faith" (as they call it) which is set forth in that Creed "to the last breath of life"—can be no better than blind leaders of the blind. And it is written, "If the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch." (Matt. xv, 14).

It may not be amiss to give an illustration of this blindness: it would be easy to adduce many; but this one shall suffice. There is a Romish book of instruction, entitled, "An Abridgment of the Christian Doctrine," composed in 1645, by Henry Turberville, D.D., of the English College of Douay,—which has been reprinted again and again, and which was carefully revised by the Right Rev. James Doyle, D.D., and prescribed by him to be used in the united Dioceses of Kildare and Leighlin. It is printed *permissu superiorum*. It appears to have been a standard book of instruction among the Romanists for more than 200 years. We may therefore take it as a very fair sample of the instruction which the Romish ecclesiastics give to their poor deluded votaries and victims. Now, in chapter xvii, entitled, "The Kinds of Sin Expounded," we find the following passage. (I quote enough to make the sense complete, in order to be clear from all imputation of unfairness.)

Q.—Is all sin voluntary and deliberate?

A.—It is, because (speaking of actual sin) no man sinneth in doing that which it is not in his power to avoid.

Q.—What other proof have you?

himself, I cannot see. Ah, but they say the Scriptures are so obscure. And are the fathers so very *clear*? Why cannot we understand the Greek of John and Paul, as well as that of Chrysostom?

The thing which next attracted my observation in the book was the following: "In the Mass there is offered to God a true, proper, and propitiatory sacrifice for the living and the dead." The Mass! and what is that? The *Bible* could not tell me. So I had to resort to the—

*A.*—Because *the whole Gospel of Christ is nothing else but an exhortation to do good and avoid evil*, than which nothing were more vain, if it be not in the free election and power of man, assisted by God's grace, to do or not to do such things."

Now, dear reader, what do you think of *that*? *The whole Gospel of Christ nothing else but an exhortation to do good and avoid evil!!!* What then is the difference between the *Law* and the *Gospel*? *The whole Gospel nothing else but this!!!* Gospel means good tidings. What good tidings is it, or can it be, to a poor perishing sinner, to set before him "an exhortation to do good, and avoid evil," when he finds, by daily and hourly experience, that he can do neither the one nor the other? Even Paul the Apostle cries out, "The good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. . . . I find then a law, that, when I would do good, evil is present with me." (Rom. vii, 19—21.) Must not they be in far worse than Egyptian darkness—"darkness which may be felt," (Ex. x, 21) who teach, that "*the whole Gospel of Christ is nothing else but an exhortation to do good, and avoid evil?*" But if it be proclaimed to me, as it is in the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, that "The Son of Man is come to seek and to save that which was lost;" (Luke xix, 10.) "In whom we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace;" (Eph. i, 7), and that He has promised, that our "Heavenly Father will give the Holy Spirit to them that ask Him," (Luke xi, 13) and that "as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God," (Rom. viii, 14). *This* is good tidings indeed. Here is *Mercy* to forgive us all our sins, and *Grace* to enable us to bring forth "the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the glory and praise of God." *Here* are indeed "good tidings of great joy!" And if any one can read the New Testament, and not see for himself, without any need of going to the fathers, the light of this glorious Gospel shining in its pages, must he not be blind indeed? A. S. T.

*Dictionary.* It is the name which the Roman Catholics give to the Sacrament of the Lord's supper ; or rather to *half* of it ; for you know they divide it, and, giving the bread to the people, do with the wine I cannot tell what. They say that it is *perfect in one kind* ; and they anathematize all who say it is not. Their curse is on me now while I am writing. Nevertheless, I must ask, If it was perfect in one kind, why did Christ institute it in both kinds ? Why did he not stop with the bread, reserving the cup ? Was it to make the sacrament more than perfect ? But this is *reasoning*. I forget myself. The Roman Catholics don't hold to reasoning.

An idea occurs to me here which I beg leave to express. If the sacrament is perfect in *either* kind, why do not the priests sometimes give the people the cup ; Why do they always give them the bread ? And why originally did they withhold the cup rather than the bread ? Some persons may imagine a reason, but I will content myself with asking the question.

But to proceed. They say that "in the Mass *there is offered to God*," &c. Why, what do they mean ? There is nothing offered to God. What is offered is to *men*. Christ says, offering to his disciples the bread, "Take eat," and reaching out the cup, he says, "Drink ye *ALL* of it." There is something offered to *men* in this sacrament, even the precious memorials of the Saviour's propitiatory death : but every one, who reads the account, sees that there is nothing offered to God. Yet the Roman Catholics, leaning on tradition, say, there is in it "a true, proper, and propitiatory sacrifice" offered to God. A sacrifice included in the sacrament ! How is that ? And a *propitiatory* sacrifice too ! I always supposed that propitiatory sacrifices ceased with the offering up of the Great Sacrifice—when the Lamb of God bled and died. Do we not read (Heb. x. 14), that "by *ONE* offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified ;" "Now *ONCE* in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself ?" "Christ was *ONCE* offered to bear the sins

of many," (Heb. ix. 26, 28,)—and it is said of his blood, that it "cleanseth from ALL sin." (1 John i. 7.) I don't know what we want, after this, of those *unbloody sacrifices*, which the Roman Catholics talk of as offered continually in the service of the mass. What is the use of them,—if they are *unbloody*, as they say;—since "without shedding of blood is no remission"? (Heb. ix. 22.)

According to the Roman Catholics, it must have been premature in Christ to say on the cross, "It is finished." They deny that it is finished. They say *it is going on* still—that Christ is offered whenever mass is said. Once Christ was offered, the Bible says; but the Roman church affirms, that he is offered *many times* daily, whenever and wherever mass is said!

I do really wonder that this religion has lasted so long in the world. How the human mind can entertain it for a day, I do not know. See how at every step it conflicts with reason. See in how many points it does violence to common sense. See, in this case, how boldly it contradicts the dying declaration of the Saviour. It is a religion unknown to the Bible; and yet still in existence, aye, and they say, *making progress*; and that even in this home of freedom! If it be so, which I question, I blush that I am an American, and am almost ashamed that I am a man.

---

### 18. *The Pope an Idolater.*

It may seem a very uncharitable title I give this article. What, some will say, charge the Pope with being an idolater! What do you mean? I mean just what I say,—that this boasted head of the church, this self-styled vicar of Christ, residing at Rome, ascribes divine attributes and pays divine honors to a creature, even to a human being, a partaker in our mortality and sin!—and if that is not idolatry, I don't know what idolatry is. If that is not idolatry, the worship of

the golden calf was not—the worship of the host of heaven was not—the worship of the gods of Hindooism is not. What truer definition of idolatry can be given, than that it is an ascribing of divine attributes and a paying of divine honours to a creature? It does not matter what the creature is; whether it be the angel nearest the throne of God, or an onion that grows in the garden, such as they of Egypt once worshipped. It is its being a created thing—it is its being *not God*, that makes the service done to it idolatry.

But can I make good this charge against the successor of St. Peter, as they call him? If I cannot, I sin not merely against charity, but against truth. But I can establish it. Nor will I derive the proof from the Pope's enemies; nor will I look for it in the histories of the Papacy. The Pope himself shall supply me with the proof. Out of his own mouth will I judge him. If his own words do not convict him of idolatry, believe it not. But if they do, away with the objection, that it is an offence against charity to speak of such a thing as the Pope's being an idolater. My charity "rejoiceth in the truth." The charge can be uncharitable only by being untrue. It is too late in the day, I trust, for idolatry to find an apologist. But to the proof. Perhaps you suppose it is some obscure Pope of the dark ages, that I am going to prove an idolater. No, it is a Pope of the nineteenth century—the present reigning Pope, Gregory XVI. He is the idolater; and here are his own words in proof of it. They are part of the circular, or encyclical letter, sent forth by him on entering on his office, and addressed to all Patriarchs, Primates, Archbishops, and Bishops. The letter may be found in the Laity's Directory, 1833, and has been extensively published, without any of its statements being contradicted. In it the Pope calls upon all the clergy to implore "that *she* (the Virgin Mary) who has been, through every great calamity, our Patroness and Protectress, may watch over us writing to you, and lead our mind by her heavenly influence, to

those counsels which may prove most salutary to Christ's flock!" Is comment necessary? Observe, he recognizes *not God* as having been their defence, but *her* as having been their protectress in past calamities, and directs the clergy to pray to her to continue her watch over them! As contrast is one of the principles on which ideas are associated, I was reminded on reading this, of the 121st Psalm, in which the writer speaks of the one "that *keepeth* Israel." It is not *she*, according to the Psalmist, but *He*, the Lord which made heaven and earth, that *keepeth* Israel. But, according to the Pope, it is the Virgin Mary that *keepeth* Israel; and he speaks of her as exerting a heavenly influence on the mind. I always thought it was the exclusive prerogative of Jehovah, to have access to the mind, and to exert an immediate influence on it; and I cannot but think now, that the Pope must *err* in this matter, though he speaks *ex cathedra*. I cannot believe he was exactly *infallible* when he wrote that letter.

But you have not heard the worst of it yet. In the same letter he says: "But that all may have a successful and happy issue, *let us raise our eyes to the most blessed Virgin Mary, who alone destroys heresies, who is our greatest hope, yea, THE ENTIRE GROUND OF OUR HOPE!*" The capitals are mine, but the words are the Pope's. Now, just look at this. Did you ever hear anything like it? Observe what Mary is said to be and to do; and what the clergy are exhorted to do. The Pope's religion cannot be the *oldest*, as they pretend. It is not the religion of the *Psalms*. In the 121st Psalm the writer says, "I will lift mine eyes unto the hills from whence cometh my help. My help cometh from the Lord." And in the 123rd, "Unto thee lift I up mine eyes, O Thou that dwellest in the heavens. Behold, as the eyes of servants look unto the hand of their masters, and as the eyes of a maiden unto the hand of her mistress; so our eyes wait upon the Lord our God, until that he have mercy upon us." But the Pope says, "Let us raise our eyes to the most blessed

Virgin Mary." There is the difference between the Pope and the Psalmist. Protestants in this case side with the Psalmist: and, in this particular, our religion is not only older than Luther, but older even than the Pope.

I would inquire of the reader whether these prayers which the Pope would have the whole church address to the Virgin Mary, are not precisely such as are proper to be addressed to God, and which others do address to him? Do they not ask of *her*, just what ought to be asked of *Him*, and what He alone can give? After asking such things as the Roman Catholics are directed to ask of the Virgin Mary, what remains to be asked of God in prayer? And is not this putting a creature in the place of God? Indeed, is it not putting God quite out of the question? The eyes are raised in prayer to the Virgin; and they are lifted no higher. There they fix. Is not this idolatry? And you see he is not satisfied with being an idolater himself; but he wants the entire clergy, and of course the whole Roman Catholic church, to join him in his idolatry!

I wish the Pope had explained how the blessed Virgin *destroys heresies*. He says she does it, and she *alone*. I should think it rather belonged to "the Spirit of Truth" to destroy heresies, and to "guide into all truth." But no, says the Pope, the Spirit of Truth has nothing to do with it. It is all done by the blessed Virgin! She "*alone destroys heresies*."

The Roman Catholics complain, that we call their Pope *Antichrist*. But I would appeal to any one to say if he is not Antichrist, who, overlooking Christ altogether, says of another, that *she* is "our greatest hope, yea, the entire ground of our hope?" Is not that *against* Christ? The Bible speaks of *Him* as "our hope," (1 Tim. i. 1); yea, of *Him* as our *only* hope; for "other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ." (1 Cor. iii. 11.) "Neither is there salvation in any other." (Acts iv. 12.) It would seem from this, that Christ is the *ground of hope*, and

*the only ground of hope.* But not so, says the Pope; the blessed Virgin is "the entire ground of our hope." By the way I should not be surprised, if that hope should disappoint its possessor. Now, is not the Pope Antichrist? Well, if he is an idolater and Antichrist, ought he to be adhered to? What sort of a body must that be, which has such a head? I think I should not like to be a *member* of it. And I must confess, that I am against such a person having any more power in our free, enlightened, and happy America, than he has already. Pray let us not, after having broken the chains of political thralldom, come in bondage to idolatry.

---

### 19. *Charles X. an Idolater.*

Having proved his holiness the Pope an idolater, I proceed now to prove "his most Christian Majesty" *that was*, the ex-king of France, an idolater; which having done, I shall have gone a good way towards proving the whole Roman Catholic church idolatrous; since, as you know, it is their boast that they all think alike, and that there are no such varieties of opinion among them, as there are among us unfortunate Protestants; though, by the way, it is not so strange that they should all think alike, when one thinks for all.

I proved *Gregory XVI.* an idolater out of his own mouth. I shall do the same in the case of *Charles X.* On the occasion of the baptism (with oil, spittle, &c., an improvement on the simple water-baptism of the Bible) of his young grandson, the Duke of Bordeaux, this was his language: "Let us invoke for him the protection of the mother of God, the queen of the angels; let us implore her to watch over his days, and remove far from his cradle the misfortunes with which it has pleased Providence to afflict his relatives, and to conduct him by a less rugged path than I have had, to eternal

felicity." He was anxious that the little boy should have a protector, one to watch over him, and to remove his misfortunes, and to conduct him by an easy path to eternal life. For this purpose, one not educated a Roman Catholic would have supposed, that he would apply to the omniscient and Almighty God. I do not know who can do those things besides God. But no, "his majesty" does no more apply to God, than did his holiness in a similar case. I suppose it would have been heresy if he had. They would have thought he was going over to Protestantism. His holiness and his majesty both make application to the creature rather than to the Creator. Charles X. does not say, "Let us invoke for him the protection of God," but of a woman; a woman indeed highly favoured of the Lord, and of blessed memory, but still a woman.

He calls her, according to the custom of his church, "the mother of God." I suppose you know that phrase is not in the Bible. And there is a good reason for it—the idea is not as old as the Bible. The Bible is an old book, almost as old as our religion. Roman Catholicism is comparatively young. I will not remark on the phrase, *mother of God*, seeing it is not in the Bible, and since it has often been remarked upon by others. But there is another thing the ex-king says of her, on which I will spend a word or two. He calls her "the queen of the angels." Now we read in the Bible, of Michael, the archangel, or prince of angels, but we do not read of the angels having a queen. We read also of a *king* in heaven, but not a word about a queen. I don't know where he got this idea of a queen of angels. He certainly did not get it out of the Holy Scriptures; and yet these Scriptures, I always supposed, contain all that we know about the angels. I wish he would tell us from his retirement, where he got the idea; for he speaks very positively about the angels having a queen. It is true, we do read, in one place in the Bible, of a *queen of heaven*; but the worship of her was so evidently idolatry, that I presume the

Roman Catholics will not quote it as authorizing the title they give, and the honour they pay, to the Virgin Mary. The account is found in Jeremiah xlv. If any one will read the chapter he will see, what that prophet thought of those worshippers of the queen of heaven. Now,—if the worship of a queen of heaven by the Jews was denounced as idolatry, and ruin came on them in consequence of it,—is not a similar worship, performed by Roman Catholics, as idolatrous, and as dangerous?

But no matter what he calls her, he asks her to do what only God can do. He treats her precisely as if she were divine. Is it not so?—and is not this idolatry? He ascribes divine perfections to her:—omniscience, else how could she watch over the child? and omnipotence, else how could she ward off evil from him? and he speaks of her as the guide of souls to eternal life. The Psalmist considered, that it was the prerogative of God to do this. He says, “Thou shalt guide me with thy counsel, and afterward receive me to glory.” (Ps. lxxiii. 24.) But the ex-king looks to Mary to conduct the young duke to eternal life. What the Psalmist expects from God, the ex-king expects from Mary. Is not this putting a creature in the place of God, the Creator? Every one must see, that it is shocking idolatry, and that the man who uses such language is as truly an idolater as any devotee of Juggernaut.

I do really wonder that the Roman Catholics continue to call their system Christianity. It is by a great misnomer that it is so called. It is not the proper name for it at all. It should be called by some such name as *Marianism*, rather than Christianity. In Christianity the principal figure is Christ; but He is not the principal figure in the Roman Catholic religion. Mary is. Therefore the religion should be called after her, *Marianism*; and not after Christ, Christianity. Roman Catholics are not the disciples\* of Christ, but of Mary;

---

\* It should rather be *the votaries*, or *the worshippers*. If they had been *the disciples* of Mary, she would have taught them to

she is their confidence and hope. Pope Gregory says *she* "is our greatest hope, yea, the entire ground of our hope." Now, I think that the religion of such people ought to be called after the one who is their greatest hope; and I have suggested a name to the Roman Catholics, which I advise them to adopt. Let their religion be called *Marianism*; and let them leave to us the name Christianity, since Christ "is *our* hope."

Having proved his Holiness, and his most Christian Majesty, the two principal characters in the church of Rome, idolaters, I think I may as well stop here.\*

---

### 20. *Idolatry near Home.*

It is wonderful what a propensity there is in fallen men to idolatry. How they do love to worship the creature rather than the Creator! In a certain church, which need not be named, the blessed Virgin, though a mere woman, receives ten, perhaps a hundred times as much religious honour as does the blessed Saviour, though He is "the mighty God," deserving of all

---

do as she did; that is, to "magnify the Lord," and to "rejoice in God her Saviour" (Luke i, 46, 47); and not to put their trust in, or to worship, *a creature*.—A.S.T.

\* For further illustration of the Idolatry of the Church of Rome, the reader is referred to a book under that title, published by the Protestant Association; and to another, entitled "*Mariolatry*," by the late Rev. Thomas Hartwell Horne. Or, if he wishes to search out the matter for himself, he may examine "*The Glories of Mary, Mother of God*," translated from the Italian of Saint Alphonsus Liguori, and carefully revised by a Catholic Priest"—Dublin, 1861; and "*The Devotion and Office of the Sacred Heart of our Lord Jesus Christ, &c., including the Devotion to the Sacred Heart of the Blessed Virgin Mary, &c.*" A new edition, Dublin, 1842. He will find in these books such gross idolatry as he scarcely could have imagined, without reading for himself.

The most awful illustrations of the gross idolatry of the Romanists in worshipping the Virgin Mary will be found in "*the Psalter of the Blessed Virgin Mary*" by St. Bonaventura:—in which the whole of the Psalms, with the *Te Deum*

homage, while she merits only respectful remembrance. One that has much intercourse with Roman Catholics would suppose the *mother* to be the Saviour of the world, rather than the *Son*. They make her to be the principle advocate of sinners in heaven. "If any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father." Who? Says St. John; "*Jesus Christ the righteous*." (1 John, ii. 1.)—the Roman Catholics say it is *Mary*! So they differ: we Protestants side with John.

I have lately met with an idolatrous temple, that is, a church or chapel avowedly erected in honour of a creature, and dedicated to a creature. Is not that a temple of idolatry? Can there be a more accurate definition of such a place? Well, I have seen one; and I have not been a voyage to *India* neither. Some think there is no idolatry nearer than *India*; and, when they hear of an idol-temple, they immediately think of *Jugernaut*. But it is a mistake. I have not been out of the United States of America, and yet I have seen a temple of idolatry. I will state the case, and let every one judge for himself. If I am under an erroneous impression, I shall be glad to be corrected. The case is

and other hymns of the Church, are paraphrased and applied to the Virgin Mary, by substituting *Lady* for *Lord*, and (often) *Mother of God* for God;—thus rendering to *her* the very worship and adoration which is rendered in the Scriptures, and by the Christian Church, to the Eternal God Himself!

The following is translated from a card which was sold in the shops at Brussels, illuminated with gold and various colours, some years ago, and probably is now.

"To Mary,

'*Our Mother who are in heaven.*'

Our Mother, who are in heaven, O Mary, blessed be your name for ever, let your love come to all our hearts, let your desires be accomplished on the earth as in heaven; give us this day grace and mercy, give us the pardon of our faults, as we hope from your unbounded goodness, and let us no more sink under temptation, but deliver us from evil. Amen."

(N.B. The Roman Catholics commonly speak of and address the Deity in the second person plural.)

Can blasphemous idolatry go beyond this?

A. S. T.

this:—on the Roman Catholic chapel in *Annapolis, Maryland*, is this inscription, “IN HONOREM DEIPARÆ VIRGINIS.” It is Latin. The English of it is, “In honour of the Virgin, the mother of God.” If I have not rightly translated it, some of those who worship in Latin can correct me.

Now, what does this mean? It *seems* to signify, that the chapel was erected, and is continued, in honour of, that is, *for the worship* of, the Virgin Mary. Now, the being in whose honour a chapel is erected is worshipped in it. If not how is it in honour of him? The inscription signifies *dedication* to the Virgin Mary. Now, the being to whom a place of religious worship is dedicated is always the object of the worship there rendered. This is universally understood. Hence we dedicate our churches to the Triune God; for Him we worship in them. They are erected *in honour* of Him. No one mistakes the meaning of these inscriptions. When we read on the Unitarian church in Baltimore this inscription in Greek, “To the only God,” we understand that the church is consecrated to the service of the only God: and it is precisely the same as if the inscription had been in the style of that at Annapolis, “*In honour of the only God.*” So when Paul found at Athens an altar with this inscription, “To the unknown God,” he inferred immediately that worship was intended, for he says, “whom therefore ye ignorantly worship.” Suppose the inscription had been “in honour of the unknown God,” would not the Apostle’s inference have been the same? Nothing is more clear, than that the inscription on which I am remarking implies, that the chapel in question is dedicated to the worship of the Virgin Mary; and, she being a creature, this constitutes it a temple of idolatry, and those who worship in it idolaters!

Let no man say that the inscription implies no more than that the chapel is named after Mary. Some Protestants name their churches after saints, but the name is not given in any case *in honour* of the saint. St.

Paul's in London was not built in honour of St. Paul. It is simply so denominated. But here we have a chapel in honour of the Virgin, and she is called *Mother of God*; apparently to justify the worship which the authors of the chapel intend for her. If this were the only proof that Roman Catholics worship the Virgin Mary, we might perhaps overlook it; but it is only one of many. No one thing is more susceptible of demonstration, less capable of denial, than that Roman Catholics render unto this creature, that which is due to God alone—religious worship. See for proof, their own Rhemish Testament with the notes. *Therefore they are idolaters.* I am sorry to say it, because I am sorry there is any occasion for saying it. But the time has come to speak out. This religion is threatening America; and it should be known, it should be proclaimed in the ear of every Christian, and every patriot, that it is something worse than mere *error*; and something more to be dreaded far than *tyranny*, which also it is, and ever has been, and must be,—it is **IDOLATRY**. It puts another, and a creature, in the place of God; or if it discards not him, it does what is equally offensive to Him, it associates other and inferior objects of worship with Him; and this his jealousy will not suffer. Whatever this great people are to become, I do hope we shall never be a nation of idolaters—creature worshippers. We had better be, what God forbid we ever should be, a nation of slaves. I do verily believe, that the Roman Catholic religion has only to be universally adopted to make us *both*.\*

---

\* This is perfectly true; Popery makes its victims the veriest slaves that ever lived upon earth. They wear, as a poet expresses it, "their fetters in their souls." That any one who pretends to advocate either civil or religious liberty should give the least encouragement or countenance to Popery is the greatest folly, or the greatest hypocrisy that can be. Just as well might one, who spends his time in forging fetters for miserable slaves, pretend to be an advocate of Liberty.

## 21. *Praying to Saints.*

This is one of the numerous points in which Roman Catholics and Protestants differ from each other. They, the Roman Catholics, pray to departed saints. This they acknowledge that they do; nor are they at all ashamed of the practice, but endeavour to justify it. If any one doubts that they hold to the *invocation of saints*, as they express it, let him consult the notes to their own Rhemish Testament; or let him look into their books of prayers, where he will read the very language in which they make their supplication to the saints.

We Protestants do *not* pray to saints, and we think we have pretty good reasons for not doing it. We will mention some of them, in the hope that they will appear to be equally good reasons, why Roman Catholics should not pray to saints.

1. We do not feel the need of saints to pray to. We have a great and good God to go unto, whose ear is ever open to our cry, and we think that is enough: we do not want any other object of prayer. Whenever we feel the need of any thing, we judge it best to apply directly to our heavenly Father, especially since James, one of the saints, testifies, that "every good gift, and every perfect gift, is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights." (Jas. i. 17.) Others may, in their necessity, if they please, apply to the saints, but we choose to ask of the great Giver of all good. In doing so, we think we are much more likely to receive, than if we should invoke the saints.

It is true, being sinners, we need an advocate with the Father: but we do not need more than one; and him we have in Jesus Christ, as John, another saint, testifies: "If any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous." (I John ii, 1.) John speaks of only one advocate; and Paul asserts that, as there is but one God, so there is but one *Mediator*

between God and men. Yet the Romanists will have it, that there are advocates many, and mediators many. The notes of the Rhemish translators on 1 Tim. ii. 5, and 1 John ii. 1, assert the doctrine of a plurality of mediators and advocates. The object of those notes is, to show, that, if any man sin, he has many advocates with the Father, and that there are more mediators than one between God and men; the very reverse of what those texts assert! I am aware that the Roman Catholics say, that saints are mediators only in a subordinate sense; but I say they are mediators in *no* sense. Does the Bible speak of them as mediators in *any* sense? The words "mediator" and "advocate," are in the Bible sacredly appropriated to Christ. There is but one, and it is He. We come to the Father by Him. To Him we come immediately. Here we need no daysman between us and *Him*.

2. We Protestants have always regarded prayer as a part of worship, as much as praise and confession of sin. Now, our Saviour says, "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him *only* shalt thou serve." We dare not, therefore, pray to any other than God. We should not like to be guilty of the idolatry of worshipping a creature.

3. If we were disposed to pray to the saints, yet we should not exactly know how to do it. Were we to pray to them generally, without singling out any by name, it would be a kind of praying at random: and we strongly suspect that our requests would not be attended to; for it may be among saints in heaven, as it is among their less perfect brethren on earth, that what is made every body's business comes to be regarded as nobody's.\* If, on the other hand, we apply to specific saints, and

---

\* This is but a weak and needless argument; for it is only one of the marks and proofs of man's sinful imperfection and present infirmity, that what is addressed to every one is regarded by none. We cannot suppose that it is so with the saints in glory. What follows is more to the purpose.

invoke them by name, this supposes that we know just who the saints are. It implies, either that we could see into their hearts while they lived, or that we can see into heaven now: both which far outreach our power. We might make some sad mistake, in praying to deceased men who have passed for saints. It is easy enough to ascertain whom the church regards as saints: but the canonized may not exactly correspond to the sanctified. But, supposing this difficulty removed, and that we know certain individuals, who, having once lived on earth, are now in heaven: the next thing is, to make them hear us, for there is manifestly no use in preferring requests to those who cannot hear them. How is this to be done? The saints are in heaven, the suppliant sinner is on earth, and the distance between them is great. Saints in heaven are not within call of sinners on earth. Where is the proof of it? If I say, "Peter, pray for me," how is he to know that I say it? Peter is not omnipresent. Do they say that God communicates to him the fact; but where is the proof of that? Besides, what does it amount to? God, according to this theory, informs Peter that a certain sinner on earth wants him, Peter, to ask Him, the Lord, to grant him something. This is a roundabout method of getting at the thing. The man had better, a great deal, not trouble Peter, but say at once, "God be merciful to me, a sinner."\*

---

\*That the Romanists themselves are strangely perplexed with the difficulty above referred to—that is to say, How the saints can hear the prayers of those who address them?—appears very plainly from the following passage of Bellarmine. (Book I, ch. 20. On the Beatitude of the Saints.)

"Concerning the manner in which they know what is said to them, there are four opinions among the doctors" :—

Four opinions, quite distinct and irreconcilable, among the doctors of a Church, which continually boasts of unanimity and infallibility !!!

But the Roman Catholics ask with an air of triumph, if we do not request living saints to pray for us. We do, for we have inspired authority for that. But that is not praying to them. There is a wide difference between praying to a saint in heaven, and asking a fellow-traveller to Zion on earth to pray to God for us. Every one must see that. When a Christian asks his minister, or his Christian friend, to beseech God for him, he certainly does not consider that he is praying to him or invoking him.\* Besides, we never ask one to pray for us, unless we know he is within hearing. We should think it very silly to do so. We must have proof of his presence, before we think of making any request of him. Yet the Roman Catholics are continually making

"1. Some say that they know them from the relation of angels, who at one time ascend to heaven, and at another time descend thence to us.

"2. Others say that the souls of the saints, as also the angels, by a certain wonderful swiftness that is natural to them, are in some measure everywhere, and themselves hear the prayers of the suppliants.

"3. Others say that the saints see in God all things, from the beginning of their beatitude, which in any way appertain to themselves; and hence even our prayers that are directed to them. So teach the blessed Gregory, the blessed Thomas, and Cajetan.

"4. Others say, lastly, that the saints do not see in the Word our prayers from the beginning of their blessedness, but that our prayers are only then revealed to them by God, when we pour them forth." •

What is all this but that inextricable confusion into which we may well expect foolish and sinful men to plunge themselves, when—vainly puffed up by their fleshly mind—they presumptuously intrude into those things which they have not seen? And is not this done, in daring contempt of the Apostolic warning. Col. ii. 18, 19? A. S. T.

\* Moreover, he naturally expects that his minister, or his Christian friend, will (when need is) make a similar request to him. So far is he from imagining that there is any kind of worship in it. A. S. T.

requests to creatures, of whose presence with them they have not a particle of proof; and who, being creatures, it is certain cannot be present with *all* that call upon them. How many individuals are every day, at the same hour, calling on the blessed Virgin for assistance! It is all folly, unless she be omnipresent—a goddess, which the Bible certainly does not represent her as being. She occupies but one small spot in the universe of God, and it is probably a great way off. She cannot hear, even if she could help. Do you suppose that her calm repose in heaven is suffered to be disturbed by the ten thousand confused voices that cry to her without ceasing from earth? Never.

In looking over the Bible, the book which contains the religion of Protestants, and which, being older than the Roman Catholic religion, proves the seniority of Protestantism over Popery, I find no account of praying to saints. I do not read of Joshua praying to Moses; or of Elisha invoking Elijah. No, there is not a word of that which constitutes so much of the devotion of the Roman Catholic, in either Testament. We do not find anything in the Acts or the Epistles about praying to the beloved Virgin,—whom *they* call *our Lady*, in allusion to the phrase *our Lord*. Those writers say nothing about the *mother*. It is all about the *Son*. What heretics Luke and the rest of them were! How worthy of being excommunicated! Roman Catholic books are full of the blessed Virgin. The Bible is all about Christ. There is the difference.

But I forgot. The New Testament does record one instance of something that resembles prayer to a departed saint. The record is found in Luke xvi. The saint addressed was Abraham. The suppliant was a rich man in hell, and he made two requests. Here is the Roman Catholic's only authority for this doctrine of praying to deceased saints, so far as he gets it out of the Bible. Let him make the most of it. When, however, he takes into consideration, that it was offered from hell, and by a man who lived and died in ignorance and

neglect of religion, and that it proved totally unavailing, I suspect he will make no more out of it.\*

---

## 22. *Specimens of Roman Catholic Idolatry.*

I take them from the Roman Catholic book which I have been reviewing: "The Christian's Guide to Heaven." I did not know before I read this book, that idolatry was the road to heaven. It used not so to be, under the Jewish dispensation. These specimens of Roman Catholic idolatry, I think the reader will pronounce with me, rise quite up to the average of Pagan idolatry.

Here is one. "We fly to thy patronage, O holy mother of God; despise not our petitions in our necessities, but deliver us from all dangers." That is the manner in which devout Roman Catholics in the United States are directed to pray. *They* fly to Mary; but "God is *our* refuge." (Psalm xli. 1.) There is the difference. They look to *her* to deliver them from all dangers. I don't know how *she* can deliver them from all dangers. I think they had better ascertain the powers of the Virgin Mary, before they place such unbounded reliance on her. I should be a very fearful creature, had I none to fly to from danger but *her*. "What time I am afraid, I will trust in *thee*," (the Lord.) (Psalm lvi. 3.) So says the Psalmist; and it is my purpose too.

The next specimen is entitled, "The Salve Regina," and thus it runs: "Hail! holy queen, mother of mercy,

---

\* Besides which it is evident that the rich man "being in torments," and not in *purgatory*, but in *hell*, actually saw Abraham, though it was afar off; and a *request* or *petition*, addressed to a person who is actually visible and present to one, is a very different thing from a *prayer* addressed to a being who is altogether invisible, and of whose presence, or ability to hear us, we have not the shadow of a proof. A. S. T.

our life, our sweetness, and our hope. To thee we cry, poor banished sons of Eve; to thee we send up our sighs, mourning and weeping in this valley of tears. Turn, then, most gracious advocate, thy eyes of mercy towards us; and after this our exile is ended, show unto us the blessed fruit of thy womb, Jesus, O clement, O pious, O sweet Virgin Mary." Now is it not a farce to call this Christianity? It is a great deal more like *atheism*. Here is an authorised Roman Catholic prayer, in which there is no recognition of God whatever!\*

Then follows a call to devout contemplation; and one would suppose, that the object of it would be God, or the Saviour. But no, it is the Virgin. "Let us, with exultation, contemplate the blessed Virgin Mary sitting in glory at the right hand of her beloved Son. She is crowned by the heavenly Father queen of heaven and earth, and appointed by Jesus Christ the dispenser of his graces." It is singular that the Roman Catholics, when they look up to heaven, see no object so conspicuous as the blessed Virgin. Now, she was not the most prominent figure in those visions of heaven, of which we have accounts in the Bible. *Stephen* saw "the heavens opened, and the Son of Man standing on the right hand of God;" but he saw nothing of the Virgin Mary sitting at her Son's right hand. Nor does *John*, in the history he gives in the book of Revelation of his visions of heaven, make any mention of seeing *her*. But it seems she is not only visible to the contemplative Roman Catholic, but almost alone conspicuous.

They speak of her moreover as crowned universal queen, and appointed dispenser of the graces of Christ. But where did they get that information? It is too much to expect us to take their word for it, since it is acknowledged that we have not the word of God for it. I always supposed Christ to be, through his Spirit, the dispenser of his own graces. I always understood it to

---

\* And the Lord Jesus is mentioned, only as something which the Virgin Mary is requested to show us! Digitized by Google A. S. T.

be Him who "received gifts for men." But it seems, according to the Roman Catholics, that quite a different person received and dispenses them. How much *novelty* there is in the Roman Catholic religion! It is almost all of it comparatively *new* doctrine. Ours, the Protestant, is the *old* religion,—after all that is said to the contrary.

But the Roman Catholic is so positive in regard to the coronation of the blessed Virgin, that we find him using the following thanksgiving: "O Jesus, in union with angels and saints, I bless thee for the glory with which thou hast environed thy holy mother; and I give thee thanks from the bottom of my heart, for having given her to me, for my queen, my protectress, and my mother." Here ends the thanksgiving to Jesus. They soon became weary of addressing *Him*, and fondly return to *the mother*. "O queen of angels and men, grant thy powerful intercession to those who are united to honour thee in the confraternity of the holy rosary," (I don't know what that means; it is a mystery that I must leave unexplained,) "and to all thy other servants." Then follows something, to which I solicit particular attention. I suspect the author and approvers of the book would be glad to obliterate the sentence I am going to quote, if they could. But it is too late. The words are these: "I consecrate myself entirely to *thy service*." Here the person wishing to be guided to heaven is directed, under the authority of the archbishop, to consecrate himself entirely to the service of the Virgin Mary,—who is acknowledged on all hands to be a creature. Mark, it is *entirely*. This excludes God altogether from any share in the person's services. He is to be *entirely* consecrated to the service of the Virgin. Will any one, who has any regard for his character as an intelligent being, say, that this is not idolatry? There cannot be a plainer case of idolatry made out in any part of the world, or from any portion of history. St. Paul beseeches us to present our bodies a living sacrifice to God, which, he says, is our reasonable ser-

vice; but this Roman Catholic guide to heaven directs us to consecrate ourselves entirely to the service of the Virgin Mary.

Accordingly the docile Roman Catholic does consecrate himself to Mary, as in the following act of devotion to her, which you may read in the same little book: "O blessed Virgin, I come to offer thee my most humble homage, and to implore the aid of thy prayers and protection. Thou art all-powerful with the Almighty. Thou knowest that from my tender years I looked up to thee as my mother, my advocate, and my patroness. Thou wert pleased to consider me from that time as one of thy children. I will henceforth serve, honour, and love thee. Accept my protestation of fidelity,; look favourably on the confidence I have in thee; obtain for me, of thy dear Son, a lively faith; a firm hope; a tender, generous, and constant love, that I may experience the power of thy protection at my death." Here you perceive the Roman Catholic says, that he *will* do what "The Guide" directs him to do. He will serve *her*; and, so doing, he hopes to experience the power of her protection at his death. Poor soul! I pity him, if he has no better company or hope in death than that. That was not the reason why David said (Psalm xxiii. 4), "Though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil." His reason was, "for Thou (the LORD, his shepherd) art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me." How can Mary be with every dying Roman Catholic who trusts in her? I should like to know. Do they go so far as to say she is omnipresent? Have they *formally* deified her, as in *practice* they have?

The devotee in this prayer uses the following language to the Virgin: "Thou art all-powerful with the Almighty." Shall I call this an *error*, or a *falsehood*? It is certain that there is no truth in it. She, a poor sinful creature, like the rest of us, saved by grace, all-powerful with the Almighty in intercession! Christ is that; but no other being is:

and to say that any other is, is not only falsehood, but *blasphemy*.

I have other specimens of Roman Catholic idolatry, which I mean to give; but those I have exhibited are sufficient to convict that church of idolatry before any court that ever sat, or any jury that was ever empaneled. *I have PROVED the Roman Catholic church and religion to be idolatrous.* I have not merely *asserted* it; it has been *demonstrated*; and the proof has been taken from her own authorized publication. To have *said* she was idolatrous, would have been uncharitable. To have *proved* it, is not. A man is responsible for the drift of his assertions, but not for the scope of his arguments.

Idolatrous! Yes, she who pretends to be the only true church, is convicted, out of her own mouth, of idolatry. She has this millstone about her neck. I wonder she has *swum* with it so long. It must *sink* her presently. I think I see her *going down* already; although I know many suppose she is rising in the world.

### 23. *More specimens of Roman Catholic Idolatry.*

Why, reader, did you know that the Roman Catholics not only *pray* to the Virgin Mary, but *sing* to her? I was not aware of it, until I got hold of the book I have been reviewing. But it is a fact that they do. At the end of the book I find the two following *hymns* addressed to her. They are both in common metre. Here is the *first*. You will see that, in point of idolatry, they are fully as bad as the prayers to her.

“O holy mother of our God,  
To thee for help we fly;  
Despise not this our humble prayer,  
But all our wants supply.

O glorious Virgin ever blest,  
Defend us from our foes;  
From threatening dangers set us free,  
And terminate our woes.”

Here is the idolatry of looking to a creature for *the supply of all wants*, and of flying to a creature for help and for defence. There is a curse pronounced in Jeremiah (xvii. 5.), on the man "that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm." If the person who devoutly uses this hymn does not make "flesh his arm," I should like to know who does.

The other hymn runs thus :—

"Hail, Mary, queen and virgin pure,  
With every grace replete ;  
Hail, kind protectress of the poor,  
Pity our needy state.

O thou who fill'st the highest place,  
Next heaven's imperial throne,  
Obtain for us each saving grace,  
And make our wants thy own.

How oft, when trouble fill'd my breast,  
Or sin my conscience pain'd,  
Through thee I sought for peace and rest,  
Through thee I peace obtain'd.

Then hence, in all my pains and cares,  
I'll seek for help in thee ;  
E'er trusting, through thy powerful prayers,  
To gain eternity."

But it seems the blessed Virgin is not the only creature they sing to. I find in the same book a hymn to *St. Joseph*, of which the first verse is,

"Holy Patron, thee saluting,  
Here we meet with hearts sincere ;  
Blest St. Joseph, all uniting  
Call on thee to hear our prayer."

Perhaps the reader is aware that the Romanists are not satisfied with praying merely to animated beings ; they sometimes supplicate things which have no life. Indeed they seem disposed to worship almost every thing, except it be Him whom they should worship. To give but one example, I find in "the Litany of the blessed Sacrament," as they call it, among many other similar supplications, this one : "O wheat of the elect, have mercy

on us." What a prayer this, to be sanctioned by an archbishop, and sent forth from one of the most enlightened cities of America, and that in the nineteenth century too! It is really too bad. We talk of the *progress* of things. But here is *retrocession* with a witness. In the *first* century the rule was, according to the practice of the publican, to pray, "God be merciful to me, a sinner;" but now in the *nineteenth*, the sinner is directed to say, "O wheat of the elect, have mercy on us!"\*

---

\* With regard to this expression, they will probably tell us, that Christ is meant by "the Wheat of the elect:" referring to John xii, 24. But their language is often so strange, that no wonder it is sometimes mis-understood. But what strange objects Romanists will choose to worship, we may learn from a book entitled, "*Bona Mors, or, the Art of Dying Happily in the Congregation of Jesus Christ Crucified, and of his Condoling Mother.*" The Sixth Edition. Printed in the year 1726. In the frontispiece we have represented to us, in truly Romish fashion, Christ Crucified, and His Condoling Mother, with a sword piercing her breast, (in reference to Luke ii. 35—materializing that expression,—after the custom of the Church of Rome, which must always have "a corporal and sensible object" for its devotions). Under this picture we have these words:

"JESUS Protect the }  
MARY Succour the } Associates,"

It is only the abstract of a much larger work; and, in the "Short Account of this Abstract" which is prefixed to it, this rule is given to be observed by all the Associates of the Confraternity: "Likewise they shall say every day, not only for themselves, but also for those at that time in their *Agonies*, or shall be next under that dreadful trial: *Lord! into thy Hands I commend my spirit, and recommend all agonizing souls. Mary! Mother of Grace, Mother of Mercy, defend us from the Enemy, and receive us at the Hour of Death. Amen.*" So that the Lord Jesus Christ and the Virgin Mary are placed just upon a level in their devotions; and the same worship is addressed to both, in the same breath!

Further on in this little book, we have "*Devout Addresses to the Five Wounds of our Saviour.*" I quote some of the expressions:

I think we have found, with reference to the Romish religion, what Archimedes could not find when he wanted to move the world. He said he could move it, provided he could have a place to stand on, from which he could with his lever act upon the world. But, as no such place could be found for him, the world was not moved. I think, however, that I have discovered a spot, from which we can not only move, but utterly subvert

“Let us adore the Five most sacred Wounds of Christ our Lord, and each one in particular. . . . We will also condole with the most Holy Mother of Christ, whose soul was pierced with the Sword of Grief, standing under the cross of her beloved Son. And likewise, we will Praise and Magnify the most Blessed Trinity, for so great and incomprehensible a benefit.”

This reminds us of the frontispiece, which I have already mentioned: but it would be hard to say, to what “great and incomprehensible benefit” the reference is made. The immediate antecedent is evident from what I have quoted, and (according to the grammatical construction, and the punctuation) seems to be evidently “the most Holy Mother of Christ, whose soul was pierced with the Sword of Grief, standing under the cross of her beloved Son.” (One would think by the way, that “most Holy” is an epithet which might have been reserved for the One Living and True God, and not bestowed upon a mere creature. But Romish *Hypodulia*, which belongs to “the Blessed Virgin,” very often runs into *Latria*—which, according to their own doctrine, belongs to God alone.) The book then proceeds:

“*To the Wound of the Left Foot.*

My Lord *Jesus* Christ! I humbly adore the most Sacred Wound of your Left Foot; I render you thanks for that cruel pain suffered with so great Love and Charity; I feelingly compassionate your torments, and the excessive grief of your most afflicted Mother. . . .

Our Father, Hail *Mary*.  
Glory be to the Father, &c.

the Roman Catholic religion. We pass over her absurdity and her intolerance, and plant ourselves on her *idolatry*. Here we will stand, and from this place we will carry on our operations against her. If the Roman Catholic church is idolatrous, can she stand? Must she not fall? What! a church that is plainly idolatrous maintain its ground as the church of Christ! It is impossible. It is but for the eyes of mankind to be opened to see her idolatry, and her reign is over. The common sense of the world cannot long brook prayers

---

*To the Wound of the Right Foot.*

My Lord *Jesus* Christ! I humbly adore the most Sacred Wound of your Right Foot, &c.

*To the Wound of the Left Hand.*

My Lord *Jesus* Christ! I humbly adore the most Sacred Wound of your Left Hand, &c.

*To the Wound of the Right Hand.*

My Lord *Jesus* Christ! I humbly adore the most Sacred Wound of your Right Hand, &c. . . . Grant also, my *Jesus*! speedy Peace and Repose to the souls in Purgatory; cause your holy servants in this world to make daily Progress in Perfection, especially those who are of this Confraternity.

Our Father, Hail *Mary*, Glory be, &c.

*To the Wound in his Sacred Side.*

My Lord *Jesus* Christ! I humbly adore the most Sacred Wound in your blessed Side, rendering thanks for the immense love manifested towards us, at the opening of your inflamed heart, I feelingly condole the Affront, and the excessive Grief of your most afflicted *Mother*. Grant me pure Love and perfect Charity, that loving you above all things, and all things in you, my miserable soul, by the assistance of your Holy

and hymns to creatures, and supplications of mercy to that of which bread is made. I would not have it persecuted ; I would not have one of its adherents harmed in the slightest degree ; but there are some things which the enlightened intellect of man cannot tolerate ; and this is the chief of those things which are intolerable to reason. It must go off the stage, even though infidelity should come on and occupy it. The religion that is not of the Bible, and that scoffs at reason, must come to an end. I have no fears of its coming to any higher ascen-

Grace, may be worthy to breathe out in the Sacred Wound of your blessed Side. I humbly beg dear *Jesus!* you'll protect your Holy Catholic Church, direct your governing *Vicar* upon earth, all Ecclesiastical Orders and Secular Persons, who are instrumental in bringing souls to their Duty. Preserve in your happy Service, all Christian Kings and Princes. Reduce into the Way of Salvation, all those that are gone astray, whether through Malice or Ignorance. Bring under your sweet Yoke all infidels, Hereticks, and other Enemies of your Holy Name.

Our Father, Hail *Mary*, Glory be, &c.

Not long after, we have a prayer which commences thus :

“Let us have recourse to the ever *Immaculate Virgin*, Mother of God, beseeching her to protect us under the Shadow of her Wings, until the Wrath of God be appeased. That she'll obtain for us pure Contrition and Perseverance in the Holy Grace of her blessed Son.”

This Devotion “to the Five Wounds” is repeatedly referred to in “the Devotion of the Sacred Heart,” mentioned in the note, p. 61. In “the Poor Man's Manual,” I find these prayers: “Hail, most precious and sacred blood, which flowing out of the side of my Lord and Saviour *Jesus Christ*, washest away the spots of our offences ; cleanse, sanctify, and preserve my soul, I beseech thee, to everlasting life. Amen.” “Soul of *Christ*, sanctify me ; body of *Christ*, save me ; water issuing out of the side of *Christ*, wash me.” So that not the whole Christ in His glorious fulness is worshipped ; but so many parts of Him !!

I leave it to the reader to make his own reflections upon these specimens of Romish Devotion.

dancy than that it now occupies. My hope is in God ; but if it were not, it would be in *man*.\*

---

\* I am afraid that neither Scripture, nor Reason, nor Experience, will warrant us in cherishing any "hope in *man*," with regard to either the downfall of Popery, or any effectual hindrance to its progress. In one year, I think, as many as twenty of the principal Literati of Germany, with William Schlegel at their head, went over from the profession of Protestantism to Popery ; and some of those among ourselves, who have of late years gone over to Popery, have been men of considerable ability and literary standing. The fact is, that—irrational as well as unscriptural as it is, and abounding with monstrous absurdities both in its Doctrines and its Practices—Popery is the Religion of Fallen Man—of humanity in its corruption and depravity ; and, in its Protean varieties, it adapts itself to all the natural propensities of man's depraved heart, as we find them variously developed in different individuals. This might be illustrated at large : but it would require a chapter, and not a note. Therefore let man, with all his reasoning powers and intellectual pride, know this, and lay it earnestly to heart,—that they who have not received the "Love of the Truth, that they might be saved," have nothing in them which can effectually preserve them from becoming the victims and votaries, and even the willing and miserable tools of that "Mystery of Iniquity, whose coming is after the working of Satan, with all power and signs and lying wonders, and with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish ;" for God, in righteous but most terrible judgement, may "send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie." (2 Thess. ii. 7—11.) Look to it, therefore, all ye who profess and call yourselves Protestants. Your privilege is very great, in having in your hands an open Bible—those "Holy Scriptures which are able to make you wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus." (2 Tim. iii. 15.) But, if your privilege is great, so are your responsibilities. Those Scriptures, and those who faithfully preach the Word of God, must be unto you, either a savour of life unto life, or a savour of death unto death. (2 Cor. ii. 14—17.) If you receive not the Love of the Truth, that you may be saved, it will witness against you ; and great will be the danger of utter apostasy—whether to Popery with all its delusions, or to the cheerless darkness of Infidelity ; and aggravated and awful will be your final doom.

A. S. T.

## 24. *Image Worship.*

If there be any truth in phrenology, I judge that Roman Catholics must have the organ of veneration very largely developed. There are no people, unless it be some pagans, who are so inclined to worship. They worship almost every thing that comes in their way, with scarcely any discrimination. The value of worship, with them, seems to depend on the variety of objects worshipped. What a pity it is they cannot confine their worship within narrower bounds! What a pity they are not satisfied with one object of religious veneration—the great and glorious God! But no. Besides Him, they must have a host of creatures—angels, saints, and what not—as objects of adoration. Nor are they satisfied with these beings themselves. They must have visible representations of them to bow down unto, and to worship. They want something to worship which they can *see*. In the profession of faith, which I find in the little book, published in Baltimore under the sanction of the archbishop, from which I have quoted so freely already—and to which I love to appeal, seeing it is published so near home, and there can be no dispute about its authority—I find this paragraph among others: “I most firmly assert, that the *images* of Christ, of the mother of God, ever virgin, and also of the saints, ought to be had and retained, and that due honor and veneration is to be given them.”\* This doctrine sounds a little different from that promul-

---

\* This is one of the unapostolical Articles of the Creed of Pope Pius IV. I find it word for word in “The Grounds of the Catholic Doctrine, as contained in the Profession of Faith, published by Pope Pius IV. By the Ven. and Right Rev. Richard Challoner, D.D., Bishop of Debra, and Vic. Ap. Fifteenth Edition. London: T. Jones, 63, Paternoster Row, Catholic Publisher, 1844”—with the single exception, that (in that citation of the Article) the word “other” is inserted before the word “saints” (“and the other saints”).

On the Creed of Pius IV., I will only observe that it can

ged from Sinai, and written with the finger of God on the tables of stone. They *seem* to be at variance, to say the least; and I think I shall be able to show presently, that they have that aspect to Romanists as well as Protestants. The voice that shook the earth, after saying, "Thou shalt have no other gods before me," said, "Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or *any* likeness of any thing that is in heaven above," &c. Now Christ, the virgin, and the saints, are in heaven above; unless any choose to surmise, that some of those reckoned saints are elsewhere. Consequently no likeness of them may be made. The law proceeds: "Thou shalt not *bow down* thyself to them, nor serve them." But

---

boast no higher antiquity than December 9, 1564—when it was first published at Rome. It is, therefore, quite a *novel* Creed. It was utterly unknown to the Primitive Church. So vain and hollow is that boast of Antiquity, which is so loudly put forth by the Church of Rome! And this ought to be kept in constant remembrance.

The Decree of the Council of Trent on the subject of Images (passed in the twenty-fifth Session, Dec. 3 and 4, 1563), runs thus:—"Moreover, that the images of Christ, of the Virgin Mother of God, and of the other Saints, are to be had and retained, particularly in temples, and that due honour and veneration are to be awarded them; not that any divinity or virtue is believed to be in them, on account of which they are to be worshipped; or that anything is to be asked of them; or that confidence is to be reposed in images, as was of old done by the Gentiles, who placed their hope in idols; but because the honour which is shewn unto them is referred to the prototypes which they represent; in such wise, that by the images which we kiss, and before which we uncover the head, and prostrate ourselves, we adore Christ, and venerate the saints whose similitude they bear. And this, by the decrees of councils, and especially of the second synod of Nicca, has been ordained against the opponents of images."

Whereupon Archbishop Wake well observes:—"Thus that wary Synod, neither determining what *honour* should be given to *images*, nor yet setting any bounds to any. But then, as it expressly allows them the *external marks of divine worship*, so, by fixing the grounds of this honour to be the *passing of it to the prototype*, not only Soto, Turrian, and Naclantus, three great divines concerned in that Synod, but also the generality

do not Romanists bow down, or *kneel*, before likenesses of the saints and others? I ask the question. I know they used to do so; and I suppose I may infer that they do so now, since it is their grand boast that their religion is *every where and always the same*. The doctrine delivered from Sinai is the old notion on the subject; and it would seem to be against every kind and degree of image worship. But, says the modern "Guide to Heaven," as the authoritative Council of Trent had said many years before, "the images of Christ, of the mother of God, and also of the saints, ought to be had and retained, and due honor and veneration is to be given them." Here are *Baltimore* and *Trent* against *Sinai*;

of those who have treated since of this matter, have concluded, that the *same adoration is to be paid to the image and the prototype*; so that, if Christ himself be worshipped with *divine worship*, then must the crucifix also be worshipped with the very same."

And this appears to be the doctrine of Cardinal Capisucchi, from whom the Archbishop quotes at large—who also refutes various other notions on the subject as savouring of heresy. THERE ARE, on this point, in this unanimous and infallible Church, THREE OPINIONS. Passing over the first and third, "The second opinion is, that *the same honour is due to the Image as to the Exemplar*; and thence, that the image of Christ is to be worshipped with the *worship of latria*; the image of the blessed Virgin, with the *worship of hyperdulia*; and the images of the other saints, with the *worship of dulia*. Thus Alexander, part 3, question 30, last art.; the blessed Thomas (Thomas Aquinas) part 3, question 25, art. 3; and thus, also, Cajetan, the blessed Bonaventura, Marsilius, Almayne, Carthusian, and others." And, if this does not amount to a positive idolatrous worship of images, I shall gladly learn what would do so?

\* [The reader should keep in remembrance, that the Romanists distinguished between three kinds or degrees of worship: *Latria*, which they hold to be due to God alone: *Dulia*, which is due to the saints; and *Hyperdulia*, which is due to the Virgin Mary. How easily and frequently *Dulia*, and especially *Hyperdulia*, run into *Latria*—insomuch that, practically, the distinction between them vanishes, and cannot be discerned, we have already seen, p. p. 55-64, 70-75; and especially in the note, p. 61, 62.]—A. S. T.

or, in other words, the archbishop and the council on one side, and He who came down on the mountain which burned with fire on the other. My readers must range themselves on either side, as they see fit.

But cannot the two things be reconciled somehow? Can they not be so explained as to remove all appearance of inconsistency? Perhaps they can, if one of them be explained *away*; that is, be made so clear, that you can't see it any longer. This is a new way some have of reconciling things; but I, as an individual, do not think much of it. I like the old way of laying things alongside of each other, and then shedding as much light as possible on both. If this is done with the two things in question, I fear there is no hope of reconciling them. To this conclusion our Romish brethren themselves seem to have come; and, seeing that the two things could not be so explained as to appear in harmony, they have most effectually explained one of them *away*. They have *suppressed* it. The second commandment has been thrown out of the Decalogue, as I have shown on a former occasion. This is a part of the Roman Catholics' "short and easy method with Protestants." It beats Leslie's with the Deists all to nothing. Whether it be as *honest* and *correct* a method as it is short and easy, I refer to the judgment of my readers. One thing is very certain—the Romanists must think that the old second commandment is, or at least, *seems* very much against them; otherwise they would not have meddled with it. Can any other reason be given for the suppression of the second commandment, but that it seems to forbid that use which Catholics make of images in their churches? If anybody can imagine another reason, I will thank him to state it. Now, where there can be but one motive impelling to an act, I suppose it is not uncharitable to refer the act to that motive.

I believe the reader is aware that, even in the little modern Baltimore book, "The Guide to Heaven," the second commandment is suppressed. I think I have

stated that fact in a former article. It is so. And why should it not be? Why should not the *invariable* religion be the same here that it is in Ireland, or in Italy? Why should American Roman Catholics be bound to keep one more commandment than European Roman Catholics? Why should they of the old countries have greater liberty of action than we of the new world? The circumstances under which the second commandment is omitted in "The Guide," are these: An examination, preparatory to confession, is recommended to the devout Romanist, on the ten commandments, that he may see, before he goes to the priest to get forgiveness, wherein he has transgressed any of them. Now, he is not directed to examine himself on the second, but *twice over* on the tenth, so as to make out the full number. Now, I acknowledge it would have been awkward to have set the person to examine himself in reference to the second commandment. It might have led to a conviction of sins not recognised by his confessor. If he had asked himself, "Is there any graven image, or likeness of any thing in heaven above, or in the earth beneath, to which I bow down?" he himself would have been apt to answer, "Why, yes, there is that image of Christ before which I kneel—and there is that likeness of the blessed Virgin which I bow down to and adore. I am afraid I have broken the second commandment." If, then, he had gone to the priest with his scruples, you see it would have made much work and trouble. It is true the priest could have said to him, "Oh, my child, you don't mean anything by it. You only use the image as a help to devotion. Your worship does not terminate on it. Your worship of it is only *relative*. Besides, you don't *adore* the image—you only *venerate* it—and you only give '*due honor and veneration*' to images—nothing more than that. You should consider, my child, the distinction between adoration and veneration—and also between *latria* and *dulia*." But this might not have satisfied the person's conscience. It might have been all *Greek* to him. Wherefore it was

judged most prudent, not to recommend any examination on the commandment about images. Perhaps it was the more prudent course. The *policy* of the measure I do not dispute.

But, say the Roman Catholics, have not Protestants their pictures and statues? Certainly we have. We do not make war against the fine arts. We can approve of *painting* and *statuary*, without practising *idolatry*. Yes, we have representations of deceased Christians; but we do not kneel before them: nor do we, on that account, drop the second commandment, as some do. The Roman Catholics make a great many explanations and distinctions on this subject of image worship; to some of which I have adverted above, in what I have supposed the priest to say. But they are substantially the same that the ancient Israelite might have made, and that the modern Pagan makes, in justification of himself. Idolaters, when called upon to explain themselves, have always been in the habit of saying, that it was only a *relative* worship they paid to the visible object; and that the adoration was meant to pass through, and to terminate on an invisible object beyond. This explanation is not original with the modern Christian idolater. It is as old as Jewish and Pagan idolatry. The worshippers of the golden calf worshipped something *beyond* the calf. The calf was only a help to devotion; and they only paid, as they thought, "due honour and veneration" to it. Nevertheless, they "sinned a great sin;" and "the Lord plagued the people" on account of it. "There fell of the people that day about 3,000." I suppose it would have been just the same had they made ever so many explanations. But their explanations were not waited for. What signify all these explanations and distinctions to the great mass of the Romish laity? They do not even understand them: and it seems that, if they both understood and regarded them, it would not help the matter. It is this very explained and qualified worship which the second commandment forbids.

I have nothing more to say about images : but I wish the Archbishop of Baltimore would allow the second commandment to appear in the next edition of "The Guide to Heaven." I wish he would let the publisher's stereotype plates be altered, so as to be conformed to the tables of stone. I am afraid the people will not get to heaven, if they have not respect to *all* God's commandments. The Psalmist seems to have thought that necessary. (Psalm cxix. 6.) It would gratify me much, if the Archbishop would permit the Lord to say to His people *all* He has to say.

---

### 25. *Relics.*

My last was on the subject of images. Here are some more things to which the Roman Catholics, if they do not exactly worship them, pay a respect and veneration which is very apt to run into worship. They are *relics*, so called. I have just come from the dictionary, where I went to find the word. I consulted Cruden's Concordance first, but I found no such word there. That contains only the words which are used in the Bible. Relics came into fashion after the Bible was written. In those old times, they were not in the habit of mutilating the bodies and disturbing the bones of the pious dead. They respected the remains of the departed by letting them alone ; as king Josiah ordered the people to do, in the case of the bones of the two prophets. They were going to disturb them ; but he told them to let them alone (2 Kings xxiii. 18). This is the way in which Protestants respect the remains of the dead. It is rather strange that Roman Catholics, in the lack of other Scripture to support their doctrine of relics, appeal to this ; and they will have it that Josiah, like themselves, entertained a great respect for relics.

By the way, I did not find relics even in the Concordance to the Apocrypha. But Johnson has it. A dictionary, you know, takes in all words. I find the general signification of the word to be *remains*. In the Catholic church it is used to designate "the remains of the bodies, or clothes, of saints or martyrs, and the instruments by which they were put to death, devoutly preserved, in honour to their memory:—kissed, revered, and carried in procession." This is the best definition of relics I can anywhere find. I am indebted for it to the Encyclopædia. But it is not a perfect definition. There are some things preserved and revered as relics, which don't exactly fall under it—as, for example, the rope with which Judas hanged himself, and the tail of Balaam's ass—both of which are kept and shown as relics.

But it may be asked if relics are not out of date. The inquirer should know, that nothing ever gets out of date with the Roman Catholics. *Always and every where the same* is their boast respecting their religion. Besides, in the Baltimore publication, "The Guide to Heaven," notice is taken of relics. It says that the saints are to be honoured and invoked, and that their relics are to be respected. Well, and where is the harm of respecting relics? I might retaliate, and ask, where is the *use*—what is the good of it? They must think that devotion is promoted by these relics. But I cannot see how the spirit of devotion is to be promoted by contemplating St. Joseph's axe and saw, or the comb of the Virgin Mary, or even the finger of St. Ann. If a person even knows that he is handling a piece of the identical wood of the cross, it does not occur to me how that is to enkindle the flame of piety in his heart. The ancient method of exciting the glow of devotion was quite different. It was by meditation on spiritual subjects. It was while the Psalmist was *musings*, that "the fire burned" within him. But it seems the Romanists come to the same thing by the aid of their relics. Well, if devotion is kindled by relics, towards whom it does

flame? Towards the saints, to be sure, whose relics they are. These remains can only remind them of those to whom they once belonged. So that it is the religious veneration of saints, not the worship of Jehovah, that is promoted by relics. All that can be said for them is, that they serve the cause of idolatry.

But I have been writing as if these relics were genuine remains of the saints;—as if the saw they show was really St. Joseph's, and the finger St. Ann's. The reader must excuse me for indulging a doubt on this point. The very idea of such things being preserved, and transmitted through eighteen centuries, is preposterous. Their own writers acknowledge that many of them are spurious;—that bones are often consecrated, which, so far from belonging to saints, probably did not belong to Christians, if indeed to human beings. If this be so, how are we to know which are genuine? There can be no internal evidence to distinguish them. The bones of saints must look just like other bones. I know it is said, that there is an odour about the genuine relics, which does not belong to the remains of the vulgar dead. How that is I cannot say. I understand that, in the failure of the ordinary external evidence, the Pope takes it on him to pronounce them genuine. This is making short work of it. But some of the authorities of the church of Rome go so far as to say, that it is not necessary the relics should be genuine. It is enough that the worshipper has an intention of honouring the saints whose bones he supposes them to be. If this be correct doctrine, churches and chapels may be readily furnished with relics: and the defect in this particular, which Roman Catholics deplore in regard to many of their establishments, may be supplied without going farther than the nearest graveyard.

If any one should still think that the relics may be genuine, there is a consideration which, if I mistake not, will carry complete conviction to his mind. It is, that there are altogether *too many* of these relics; so that some of them must be spurious. Five devout pilgrims

happening to meet on their return from Rome, found, on comparing their notes, that each had been honoured with a foot of the very ass upon which Christ rode into Jerusalem. Here were five feet for one animal. Moreover, it is said, that there are as many pieces of the timber of the true cross, in different parts of Europe, as would supply a town with fuel for a winter!

But, say they, were not the bones of Joseph preserved, and afterwards removed to Canaan? Undoubtedly they were. But they were all kept together in a coffin, and they were removed, not to be worshipped, but to be buried. Joseph, being persuaded that God would visit his people, and bring them out of Egypt into Canaan, enjoined it on them to take his remains along with them, for he wished them to repose in the land of promise. What this has to do with relics, I have not the discernment to perceive. How it bears any resemblance to the Roman Catholic practice of disturbing coffins, and separating bone from bone, and cherishing them as things to be revered, I cannot see. Yet no less a character than Cardinal Bellarmine appeals to this fact, in support of their doctrine of relics. So also they cite the case recorded in 2 Kings xiii. 21, of the dead man that was revived by coming in contact with the bones of Elisha. But how does this favour relics? The bones of Elisha were quietly reposing in the place where they were laid at his death. Not one of them had been touched. But, if relics had been in vogue then, do you suppose the remains of such an eminent saint as Elisha would have been left undisturbed?

I was surprised to find, that Bellarmine refers to Deut. xxxiv. 6, in support of relics. It is that remarkable passage, in which the Lord is said to have buried Moses in a valley in the land of Moab, and that no man knoweth of his sepulchre unto this day. I suppose the Cardinal would have us infer from this, that, if the place of Moses' body had been known, it would have been dug up and converted into relics. And, therefore, the Lord took care it should not be known. The devil, it seems,

from Jude verse 9, contended for it for some such purpose as this ; but he was foiled. The reference to this passage strikes me as rather an unhappy one.

But were not handkerchiefs and aprons brought from the body of Paul, and miracles thereby wrought? Yes, but they were not relics. Paul was living. Besides, who does not see that those articles of dress were but *signs* to connect the miracles, in the minds of the people, with the person of God's inspired ambassador? Was any honour due to them? Do we hear of their being preserved and revered? No. I do not find them in any list of relics. They passed again immediately into their former appropriate use, as handkerchiefs and aprons. Finally, they appeal to the efficacy of the *shadow* of Peter, as related (Acts v. 15), in proof of the virtue of relics. But as there appears to be no *substance* in this argument, I leave it unanswered: and I have only to add, that I wonder not that infidels abound so much in Roman Catholic countries, when Christianity is held up before them, as embracing, and even giving prominence to, such doctrines as the veneration of relics, the invocation of saints, and many more like them.

---

## 26. *Seven Sacraments.*

What! Seven! How is this? I read in the Bible of only *two*. Whence have they the other *five*? Oh, they come from the other source of Christian doctrine, *tradition*. They were *handed down*. It is true, the apostles *wrote* of only two sacraments; but Roman Catholics would have us believe, that they *preached* and *conversed* about five others; and those that heard them, spoke of these sacraments to others, and they to others still; and so the story passed from lip to lip, until at length the Council of Trent, I believe it was, concluded that some-

thing had better be written about these five *extra* sacraments. I wonder that was never thought of before. It is surprising that it never occurred to the apostles, when they were writing their Epistles, to say a syllable about these *seven* sacraments. It would seem to have been very thoughtless in them. I may be very hard to please, but I cannot help feeling a desire to have *Scripture*, as well as *unwritten tradition*, in support of a doctrine or a practice called Christian. I like to be able to trace a doctrine all the way back to the Bible, and to find it originating in the very oracles of God themselves. Some think it sufficient, if they can follow a doctrine back as far as the earlier fathers; and especially if they can trace it to the Epistles of Ignatius. But this does not satisfy me. There are certain other Epistles, rather more ancient, in which I should like to find the doctrine. Ignatius was a very good man, but he did not belong to the days of Paul, by any means. Ignatius, Clemens, and all those good fathers, stood on the bank of the stream: but Paul and his associates sat around the fountain. These last saw truth in its rise; the others only saw it in its flow. True, they were *near* the source, but they were not *at* it; and who knows not that a stream may be corrupted very near its source? If I live eighteen or nineteen miles distant from a certain fountain, whose stream passes by my residence, and I want to know whether its waters have been corrupted, do I trace back the stream until I come within a mile or two of the fountain, and there stop,—concluding, that such as the water is there, such it must be at the spring? Do I not rather go all the way up to the fountain? Which ought I to do? It strikes me as very strange, that any should suspend their search after truth a century or two this side of the Bible era. I think they should go all the way back to the Bible.

But I am wandering from my subject, which is the sacraments. What are those other *five*? One is *marriage*. What! marriage a sacrament! How does it

answer to the definition of sacrament? \* What spiritual thing is signified by it? Marriage is said to be "honourable in all:" but nothing is said of its being a sacrament. If it be a sacrament, why are not priests, as well as others, permitted to *take* this sacrament. Why should the universal clergy be debarred the privilege of this holy thing? Does its *sacred* character render it unsuitable to those who fill the sacred office?

The other day I was thinking—for, being a Protestant, I *dare* to think even on religion—and this thought occurred to me: "Is it possible that God has denied the whole body of the clergy, of all nations and ages, the privilege of knowing how He pitieth them that fear him; and of approaching to the experimental knowledge of his exceeding readiness to give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him—the privilege, in other words, of being able to feel the force of some of the most touching representations which He has made of His dispositions towards His creatures, founded on the parental relation?" I read in the Bible (Ps. ciii. 13), that "*like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear Him.*" Now, can it be sinful for a minister of Jesus Christ to know by experience (the only way in which it can be fully known), how a father pitieth, and how, consequently, the Lord pitieth His people? I think it is man, and not God, that constitutes this a sin. Again,

---

\* The Romanists contrive to make for themselves a Scriptural proof that marriage is a Sacrament, in the following manner:—The Greek word *mysterion* (mystery) occurs 27 times in the Greek Testament. In every other instance, the Rhemish version translates it by the word *mystery*; but in Eph. v. 32 (referring to the preceding context, verses 22-31), they render it by the word *sacrament*: "This is a great sacrament." (The Vulgate here reads *sacramentum*—as also in Eph. i. 9; iii. 3, 9; Col. i. 27; 1 Tim. iii. 16; Rev. i. 20; xvii. 7; but in most of these passages it cannot mean a *sacrament*, in the technical sense of the term; but is only another word for *mystery*, as the Rhemish themselves translate it. So that in this single instance it is evidently translated *sacrament* only to serve a purpose, and to bolster up the notion that marriage is a sacrament.—A. S. T.

does God make this general appeal to His creatures, (Matt. vii. 11), "If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, *how much more* shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask Him!" And has He, at the same time, excluded a large class of His creatures from the privilege of ever knowing, how well disposed parents are to bestow good things on their children? And has he laid under this ban, the very persons whom He has appointed to represent and testify of Him to men? Has He appealed to the parental feelings of His creatures, and then forbidden a large and important class of them to know what those feelings are? This is rather more than I can believe.

A minister of Jesus Christ may decline the privilege of marriage in his own case; he may not *use that power*, as Paul, in his peculiar circumstances, did not; and as many a *Protestant* minister does not. This is one thing; but has God cut off the whole order of the clergy from even the *right* to marry? That is the question. And that is a very different thing.

---

### 27. *Transubstantiation.*

Because Christ says, in reference to the bread, "This is my body," the Roman Catholics contend that the bread is changed into the body of Christ; and this they call Transubstantiation. And when we say, that the passage is not to be interpreted *literally*, but that the bread is merely indicated as the representative of Christ's body, they reply with wonderful confidence, "Ah, but does He not say it is his body?—does He say it *represents* his body merely?—what authority have Protestants to bring in a figure here?" Now let *me* be heard. I have no disposition to ridicule the doctrine of Transubstantiation, especially as it professes to be founded on Scripture. I would give always a candid hearing to the claims of a doctrine, which even *seems* to be held out of respect to the authority of the Bible. But I must say,

that the Roman Catholic does not carry his veneration for the Scriptures far enough ; or he is not consistent in his interpretation of them. I think I can show that, to be consistent with himself, he should believe in many more than one Transubstantiations. Let him turn to Luke xxii. 19, 20. He reads in verse 19, "This is my body." Therefore, he reasons, the bread becomes the body of Christ. Very well. But read verse 20, "This cup is the new testament." Here is another Transubstantiation. The cup or chalice becomes the new testament. It is no longer *gold* or *silver*, but a testament or *will*. Does not Christ say it is the new testament? What right have *Roman Catholics* to bring in a *figure* here. *The cup is a will*—Christ says so. To be sure, if it were carried to a probate office, it would be thought out of place, and an article for a silversmith to prove rather than a judge of probate. But no matter for that. What if the senses do tell you that it is still a cup, and the body still bread, will you believe those liars—the senses? But if they are such liars as this would make them out to be, why should I ever believe them—why should I believe them, when they tell me that I see in the Bible those words: "This is my body?" That testimony of the senses the Roman Catholic believes: but if they lie about the body, still declaring it is bread, after it has ceased to be any such thing,—why may they not lie in regard to the letters which spell "this is my body." Under the appearance of these letters there may be something quite different, even as, under the appearance of bread in the eucharist, is the body of Christ, as the Roman Catholics affirm!

But these are not the only instances of Transubstantiation. The Bible is full of them. I find two cases of this *change* recorded in Rev. i. 20; *one* in which certain stars become angels, and another in which certain candlesticks become churches. Do you doubt it? Read for yourself: "The seven stars *are* the angels of the seven churches, and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest *are* the seven churches." The construction here is pre-

cisely similar to "this is my body." Christ is the speaker in each case, and He says the stars *are* angels, and the candlesticks *are* churches. Who has any right to imagine a *figure* here?

Perhaps every body does not know that Transubstantiation is an Old Testament doctrine. But, according to this mode of interpretation, it is. St. Paul, in 1 Cor. x 4, alluding to the rock which Moses smote in the wilderness, says, "That rock *was* Christ"—not, it *represented*, but it *was* Christ! Away with your figures.

Many other examples of Transubstantiation might be given from the Old Testament. Let two remarkable cases suffice, of which we have an account in Genesis xli. 26, 27: "The seven good kine are seven years, and the seven good ears are seven years," &c. Here seven cows and seven ears of corn are changed into seven years of three hundred and sixty-five days each!

I suppose I might find many hundred examples of these Transubstantiations. Now, does the Roman Catholic believe in all of them? He ought, most undoubtedly he ought, on the same ground that he believes in one. Let him, then, either believe in them all, or else never adduce, "This is my body," in proof of the Transubstantiation held by his church. I wish Mr. H. or somebody else would set me right, if I err in this argument.\*

\* This argument might be drawn out at much greater length. In short, any one who carefully studies the language of the Old Testament, even in our Authorized Version, will clearly see that this *metaphorical* mode of speaking—such as saying, "All flesh *is* grass" (Isaiah xi. 8) rather than "all flesh *is like* unto grass" (omitting the words *as* or *like*) belongs to the very genius of the Original Hebrew: for he will find no end of instances, in which the word *as* is printed in italics, in order to indicate that there is nothing in the Hebrew to correspond with it, even in cases in which the idiom of our language requires it. "Behold, Thou hast made my days an handbreadth" (Ps. xxxix. 5). "The wrath of a king is messengers of death." "Pleasant words are an honeycomb" (Prov. xxi. 14, 24), &c., &c.—A. S. T.

28. *Half a Sacrament.*

Half a sacrament! Who ever heard of such a thing? A sacrament divided! Yes, even so. The authorities of the Roman Catholic church, Pope, Council, &c., have divided the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, which our Saviour instituted the same night in which He was betrayed; and, ever since the Council of Constance, they have allowed the people only one half of it. They have told them that they must put up with the bread, for that they want the cup for themselves. But did not Christ give the cup, in the original institution of the sacrament, to as many as He gave the bread? Yes, Christ did. So say Matthew, Mark, Luke, and Paul. He took the cup, they tell us, and gave it to them; and Matthew adds that He said in giving it, "Drink ye *all* of it;" let not this be omitted by any disciple. It would seem as if Christ foresaw what the Constance Council was going to do, and therefore said, "Drink ye *all* of it." Rome might with more plausibility have denied her laity the other half of the sacrament—the bread. After the command to take the cup, there follows the reason—observe it: "For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for *many*, for the remission of sins." Now, the Roman Catholics say, that only priests were present on that occasion, and that the giving of the cup to *them* can be no precedent for giving it to the laity. But, though we should admit that they were at that time priests, I want to know whether the reason for partaking of the cup does not apply to others besides the clergy. Was not the blood shed for the laity as well as for the clergy? And, if this be the reason why any should partake, it is equally a reason why all should for whom the blood was shed. The precept and privilege to drink is coextensive with the reason annexed to it. Now I have not been in the habit of regarding the propitiatory death of Christ as a part of the *benefit of clergy*—as one of the peculiar privileges of the priesthood. I object, therefore, to the restriction of the cup

of blessing to the clergy. The symbol of the blood shed for many, for the remission of sins, I claim to be my privilege as truly as that of any priest. Christ did not shed his blood for the sons of Levi alone.

Yes, Christ gave it in both kinds:—and what is more, the Roman Catholics themselves acknowledge that He did, and that the primitive church administered it in both kinds; yet (*hoc tamen non obstante\** are their very words), they appoint, that the people shall receive it but in one kind—that is, notwithstanding Christ and the primitive church. And they declare them accursed who teach or practise otherwise. What is this but *anathematizing* Christ? But surely they must have something to say in justification of their conduct in this respect. To be sure they have. Do you not know, that the Pope is the head of the church, and that he is infallible; or if he is not, yet the *firm* Pope & Co. are. Yes, but there was Pope *Gelasius*, who lived a good while before. He, having heard of some Manicheans who received the bread without the wine, decided that such a dividing of one and the same sacrament might not be done without a heinous sacrilege. Was not he head of the church too, and was not he infallible? If he was not, I wonder how he could transmit infallibility?

This withholding of the cup is one of the boldest strokes of that church. I cannot help admiring the courage it manifests. Who would have thought it could have succeeded so well? I wonder they even undertook to carry this point. However, they have done it. There was some murmuring against it, to be sure. Huss, and Jerome of Prague, made a noise about it: but they *burnt* them; and then, of course, they made no more noise about it.

But are not Christians followers—that is, imitators of Christ? Oh, yes. But this withholding of the cup is not doing like Christ. The Roman Catholics say, that

que est:

\* Yet this, notwithstanding.

Digitized by Google

Christ is with their church to the end of time. It strikes me, however, that He could not have been with them at that point in the progress of time when the Council of Constance sat.

I do not know what others think ; but, for my own part, I don't believe, that any power on earth has a right to limit a grant of Jesus Christ ; or, in other words, to take away what He has given. He said of the cup, "*Drink ye all of it*"—and I, for one, will do it ; and I think *all* ought : and, if the Roman Catholics will come over to us, they too shall have the cup of salvation. O, if I had the ear of the Roman Catholics now, I would not ask them to confess their sins to me ; but there is a thing I would tell them : I would say, My dear Roman Catholic brethren, you never remember Christ in his sacrament. You only *half* remember him. He said, "*Eat and drink in remembrance of me.*" You only do one. You do not *show* the Lord's death ; for Paul says, "*As often as ye eat this bread and drink this cup, ye do show the Lord's death.*" It is only they who do *both* that make this exhibition. Christ's death is not shown by the bread merely, but by both the elements. I know your church says, that the blood is in the body, and that, in taking one, both are taken, for that, "*Christ is whole and entire under each kind,*" as the Council decrees. But how came Christ himself to know nothing of this ? Did he do a superfluous thing in giving the cup ? What if the blood is in the body, and, the bread being changed into the body, we take the one in taking the other ?—we want the blood *separated* from the body, the blood *shed*. The blood of Christ is not an atonement for sin, except as it is shed. Roman Catholics, you never celebrate the Lord's Supper. In the Lord's Supper there was a *cup*. In your mass there is none. You hold that the discourse in John vi. relates to an atonement ; and there it is written, "*Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.*" Now, according to his own principles, you have no life in you, for you do not drink his

blood. The most you can be said to do is, that you eat it in connection with his body! One thing more, Roman Catholic brethren. There can be no such thing in reality as half a sacrament. To divide a sacrament is to destroy it. What follows, then, but that the *whole* sacrament is taken from you? Look at this: just fix your mind five minutes on this subject, and you are, I do not say what, but you are no longer a Roman Catholic. *Five minutes.* That is all. But you say, I must not doubt; yet you may think; and God the judge will never condemn you for exercising your mind.\*

---

### 29. *Extreme Unction.*

When it looks as if one was going to die, then by all means let the priest be sent for: and, when he has come, let him receive the dying man's confession, (but, if the priest should be long in coming, I would advise him to confess to God. I think it would answer as well. Indeed I prefer that near way to pardon, to the other circuitous route)—and let him then, in that extremity, anoint him with oil! This is *extreme unction*—a sacrament—one of the *seven*! I think they must have been at a loss to make up the seven, when they pressed this into the service.

There does not seem to be a great deal of religion in it, nor any excess of common sense. But to speak of it, as constituting a preparation for death is really shocking. What! a preparation for dying, and for meeting and answering to God, procured by the intervention and unction of a human priest—done by oil! Truly this is

---

\* For, as we have seen before, God commands us in His Word to exercise our judgment, saying, by the mouth of Paul, "I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say" (1 Cor. x. 15). "Prove all things; hold fast that which is good" (1 Thess. v. 21).—A. S. T.

an easy way of getting to heaven, particularly where priests are plentiful. I do not wonder that the Roman Catholic religion is *popular*. This is, indeed, "prophesying smooth things." We Protestants have no such doctrine to preach. When we are called to see a sick person, we candidly acknowledge, that there is nothing *we* can do for him which shall infallibly secure his salvation. We tell him what *he* must do : that he must repent and believe in Christ : and then we ask God to undertake and to do for him. It is only on certain conditions that we can assure him of his salvation. The priests say, that they can insure the person's salvation : but to any such power as that, we do not pretend.

But have not the Roman Catholics plain Scripture for their doctrine of extreme unction ? If they have—if it is *written*, and not merely *handed down*, then I shall be at once a believer in it. Let us see : they adduce two passages in support of their dogma, Mark vi. 13, and James v. 14. The first is *historical*. It affirms that the apostles "anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed them." The other is *hortatory*. "Is any sick among you ? let him call for the elders of the church ; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil : the Name of the Lord"—that is, doing what the Apostles are represented by Mark as having done ; and doing it, as appears from the next verse, with the same end in view, viz. *healing*. Now, what authority for the sacrament of extreme unction is there here ? Here is, indeed, an anointing with oil by an ecclesiastic. But who does not see, in how many particulars, and how widely, this anointing differs from the extreme unction of the Roman Catholics ? Their anointing proceeds on the supposition that the person is going to die ; and, could his recovery be foreseen, it would be omitted. But the anointing practised by the Apostles and elders of the church was in order to the recovery of the person, and was in every case connected with his recovery. Their anointing was the *attendant* and *token* of a miraculous cure. It held

precisely the same place with Christ's making clay of spittle, and anointing therewith the eyes of the blind man; or with Naaman's being directed to go and wash seven times in Jordan. It was, like each of these, an external, and in itself inefficacious sign of a miraculous recovery; and even now there is no objection to the use of the sign, if the thing signified is to be expected. Let the priests anoint with abundance of oil all their sick, if they can accompany that unction with such a prayer of faith as shall save the sick. But if the miraculous recoveries have ceased, or be not expected, let there be a doing away of the sign. As soon as any sign becomes *insignificant*, let it cease to be used. Extreme unction is now a sign of nothing. It would have been useless to go down into the pool of Bethesda, after the angel had ceased to pay his periodical visit to it. So in this case, there being now no healing expected, there need be, and there should be, no anointing.

How the priests now differ, in their use of the oil, from those whose successors they pretend to be! The apostles and elders anointed persons with a view to their living; but the priests with a view to their *dying*. The former would not anoint, if they foresaw the person was to die; the latter will not, if they foresee that he is to live. How much at odds they are! How Scripture and tradition do quarrel! And the worst of it is, there is no such thing as bringing about a reconciliation between them.

Among the doctrines of the Roman Catholic church, I am at a loss whether to give the palm to this or to purgatory. Purgatory teaches the doctrine of salvation by *fire*. Extreme unction, the doctrine of salvation, by *oil*. There does not seem to be much Christianity in either. Extreme unction is, however, the *smoothest* doctrine. Decidedly so. Jesus Christ came by *water and blood*. The salvation He proclaims is by *these*; and the sacraments He instituted, are Baptism and the Lord's Supper. These signify something: the first, *regeneration*; the second, the *propitiation* made for our sins.

307 *Doing Penance.* *be Insufferable!* What? Why, that the Roman Catholic translators of the Bible should render the Greek word, which signifies *repentance*, by the phrase, *doing penance*? I would not willingly be uncharitable, imputing a bad motive where a good one might have been present. But I must say, that I know not how to reconcile this rendering of the word with their integrity as translators. I cannot help believing that they knew better. Could they have supposed, that they were selecting the most judicious method of conveying the mind of the Spirit as expressed in that word, when they concluded on rendering it *doing penance*? Why did they use two English words (coining one of them, moreover, for the occasion) to convey the meaning of one Greek word? Was there any necessity for it? Was there no single English word that would express the sense? There was *repentance*, the word adopted by the translators of the common English Bible. What objection was there to the use of that? Why was that passed by? and especially, why was it passed by, in order to give a preference to such a phrase as *doing penance*? If they had disliked *repentance*, they might, with more propriety, have employed the word *reformation*. It would seem as if they were anxious to avoid the use of any word which expressed or implied either *sorrow* or *amendment*, and therefore they fixed on the phrase *doing penance*. I am mistaken if these translators have not a heavy account to give. This single rendering, if it were the only exceptionable one, would be as a millstone about the neck of that translator. Just think of the false impression, and that on the point of the highest moment, made on the minds of so many millions by this one egregiously erroneous version.

Contemplate the state of the case. God, in prospect of the judgment-day, and by the terror of it, commands all men every where to do a certain thing (Acts xvii. 30, 31); and Christ says that except they

do it, they shall perish (Luke xiii. 3.) This thing God expresses by the Greek term *metanoia*. But all do not understand Greek. Wherefore, for the instruction and instruction of those Roman Catholics who read only the English language, and who cannot be persuaded of the sin of reading the Bible, it becomes necessary to render that word into English. Certain persons undertake to do it; that is, to interpret the mind of God as expressed by *metanoia*. And what do they make it out to mean? Doing penance! That is it, they say; "Do the penance which your priest appoints, after you have made your confession to him, and that is all." It is no such thing. This is a misrepresentation of the Almighty. This is not the subject of the command and warning to which reference has been made. And to suppose that it is on account of this that angels rejoice, i. e. when a sinner does penance, is truly absurd. Oh, what a translation! "There shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that doth penance." Luke xv. 7. Truly angels must be easily made to rejoice, if this be the case. How it sounds! How offensive to

\* It may be well to look a little into the history of this rendering; for it will shew how stealthily error creeps into the Church. The Latin Vulgate sometimes translates the Greek word *metanoia*, by the two Latin words, *Penitentiam agite* (Matt. iv. 17). Now this means, in good Latin, no more than *act*, or *exercise repentance*, and was evidently equivalent to *penitence*, or *repent*. But this call to repentance being commonly accompanied, in the early Church, with some command to do special acts prescribed by the priest, or presbyter, as *works meet for repentance* (Matt. iii. 8), these acts thus prescribed came to be considered as the special part of repentance, and so the Popish notion of *penance* was substituted for the Scriptural notion of *repentance*; and thus *penitentiam agite* acquired the Popish sense of *Do Penance*. And finally, in Popish translations of the Vulgate, this phrase came to be almost universally used for the true translation, *Repent*,—the translations from the Vulgate being decidedly much worse than the Vulgate itself, in which *penitentiam agite* is evidently equivalent to *penitence*. (Compare Matt. iv. 17, with Mark

the very ear, and how much more to the enlightened judgment, is this rendering! "God commands all to do penance." Acts xvii. 30. "Except you do penance, you shall all likewise perish." Luke xiii. 3, 5. "He is not willing that any should perish, but that all should *come to penance!*" 2 Pet. iii. 9. Shocking! Away with such a translation from the earth. The *Douay* Bible is not God's Bible; for it *purposely* misrepresents Him in a main point, viz: on the article of repentance. Here is a translation of *metanoia* implying *no sorrow for sin, no change of mind* (which the word literally signifies), *nor any moral reformation*; but only the doing of certain external, and generally puerile, things prescribed by a priest; all which may be done without any internal exercise—without any emotion of any kind. The word, according to the Roman Catholics, makes no requisition on the *heart* whatever. And truly, a man may be a good Roman Catholic, without ever *feeling* any thing,—unless it be the bodily pain of self-inflicted penance. And every one knows, that *thinking* is not necessary to constitute a good Roman Catholic. Wherefore a man may be a good Roman Catholic without either *thinking* or *feeling*, that is, without any exercise of either mind or heart. All that seems requisite is mechanical *action*. *Maelzel*, the constructor of automaton, could almost make one. Is this uncharitable? It is *true*; and it ought to be said. It ought to be known and proclaimed, that the religion of the church of Rome *overlooks the reason, conscience, and heart of man*, addressing no appeal to them, and indeed making no use of them. Is it then the religion of the Holy Ghost? Is this the Christianity of Christ? It cannot be.

I ought, perhaps, to say, that I find, in one place in the Rhemish Testament, the Greek *metanoieite* translated correctly, *repent*. It occurs in Mark i. 15. Whether it was done in a moment of relenting, or through inadvertence, I cannot say. It was never repeated that I can find. Perhaps the translators had to do penance, for presuming to render the word in that one case correctly.

Do you not see what a difference it makes to the priests, if you give it out, that *repentance* is what is required? *Then* a sinner will be saved if he repent, irrespective of the priest. The *great High Priest* that is passed into the heavens will see to the case of every true penitent. But if the requisition be *doing penance*, in that case, there being something necessary which the priest prescribes, he has the poor sinner completely in his power. It makes the salvation to depend on the acts prescribed by the priest. Do you wonder that the priests insist on the translation *do penance*, and forbid the people to read in a Bible which requires them to *repent*?

There is a precious note in the Douay-Bible connected with this subject, which may afford me a topic hereafter.

---

### 31. *The Hardest Religion.*

Among the compliments which our brethren of the Church of Rome pay to their religion, this is one. They say it is the *hardest* religion—that no other religion requires so much of its votary. Hence they would have it inferred, that theirs must be the divine and only true religion. The yoke being so hard, and the burden so heavy, they must, of course, be Christ's.

I shall examine this claim to the precedence in point of difficulty. And something I am prepared to concede to the Church of Rome on this score. There is a part of her *faith* which I acknowledge it is exceedingly hard to receive. It requires a powerful effort, doubtless, to believe the doctrine of Transubstantiation—namely, that the bread and wine of the sacrament are changed into ————what? The body and blood of Christ? Not that alone, but also into his *soul and divinity*! Yes, it is hard to *believe* it is so, when one *sees* it is not so, and *knows* it cannot be so. It is hard to disbelieve at will those long-tried and faithful servants, the senses; and especially that first of the five, the sight. There is

difficulty in the Roman Catholic religion truly. It puts a tremendous strain on the mind.

There is also her doctrine about the necessity of baptism to salvation, which some of us find it very hard to believe. One reason of our difficulty is, that that doctrine bears so hard upon the heathen, and particularly on the immense multitude of infants who every where die without baptism. According to the doctrine of Rome, that baptism is indispensable to salvation, they are all lost for want of a little water! Poor things, they fare no better than the thief on the cross, who died without baptism. They get no farther than Paradise the first day. It is a hard religion. This doctrine is cruelly hard upon *children*; as her doctrine, that money, by the purchase of prayers and masses, releases souls from purgatory, is hard upon the *poor*.

So much for the difficulty of her *faith*. But *all* of that is not so hard; as for example, her doctrine of *indulgences*. It is never hard to be *indulged*. There is no hardship, but very great convenience for a delinquent sinner, to have such a bank to draw upon, as the accumulated merits of the saints in by-gone ages, who did more than they needed for their own salvation, having loved God with considerably more than "all the heart, and soul, and strength, and mind!" This doctrine does not make the Roman Catholic religion a hard one: neither does the doctrine of *venial sins*. You know they hold, that there are some sins whose wages is not death. They are excusable—mere peccadilloes. We recognise no such sins. We think with St. Paul, that "cursed is every one that continueth not in *all* things which are written in the book of the law to do them." Gal. iii. 10.

But perhaps when the Roman Catholics speak of their religion as a hard one, they refer not so much to their *faith* as their *practice*. It is what they have to *do* that is so hard. But why do they speak of it as so hard? It looks as if it was a task to them—as if they do not find their sweetest and purest delight in it. It would appear as if they did not esteem the service of God as

much their privilege as their duty. One would suppose, to hear them talk, that the commandments of God are grievous. I am truly sorry for them, that Christ's yoke, which, He says, is easy, they find to be so *galling* to them. We, Protestants, never think of speaking of our religion as hard. "Wisdom's ways," we find to be ways of pleasantness, and all her paths peace." Prov. iii. 17. Our language is, "Oh how love I Thy law!—How sweet are Thy words unto my taste! yea, sweeter than honey to my mouth!" Psalm cxix. 97, 103. But it seems not to be so with Roman Catholics. I have been struck with surprise, to hear even the most devout of them speak of the requirements of their religion as things which they *must* comply with. "I must," is the language which they use, in reference to almost every thing of a religious kind that they do. I have thought with myself, how is it possible that their hearts can be in their religion, if they esteem it such a hardship. How will heaven be able to make them happy, if the exercises and acts on earth, most akin to those of heaven, are so irksome, that they engage in them only from sheer necessity?

But I must advert to some of the hard practices which the Roman Catholic religion requires of her votaries. There is that practice of confessing to the priest. Is not that hard! Truly it is. I think I should find it hard to tell every thing, even the most secret thoughts, to any body called a priest. And then to have to perform whatever penance he might please to prescribe. Yes, it is hard—so hard, and so absurd too, that God has never required it at our hands. He says to the sinner, Come at once to me with your broken heart, and make your confession to me; for He is "in Christ reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them." (2 Cor. v. 19.)

Again, *fasting* is reckoned among the hard things of the Roman Catholic religion; and indeed it is hard not to eat when one is hungry. Their idea of fasting is in accordance with what St. Paul says to Timothy in his

prediction concerning them, an "*abstaining from meats,*" or *certain meats*, or "*whatsoever is sold in the shambles.*" Now there is nothing so very hard in that restriction. He must be very difficult to please, who cannot satisfy his appetite out of all the variety of the vegetable kingdom, when he has moreover the liberty of the entire fish market.

But there is one thing about the Roman Catholic religion, in view of which I suppose I must admit it to be the *hardest* religion. It belongs strictly neither to *faith* nor *practice*. You will guess that I have in my mind—*purgatory*.<sup>\*</sup> Now, as a *doctrine*, there are many things about it hard to be believed; as, for example, that material fire should be able to act on an immaterial

---

<sup>\*</sup> There is certainly something very hard in the doctrine of Purgatory. "Purgatory," according to Bellarmine, one of the highest authorities in the Church of Rome, "is that place in which, after death, the souls of those persons are purified who were not fully cleansed on earth, in order that they may be prepared for heaven, wherein nothing shall enter that defileth." In attempting to prove it, he mainly relies on 2 *Macc.* xii. 43—46, on which Roman Catholic writers in general lay great stress. The words are: "And making a gathering, he sent twelve thousand drachms of silver to Jerusalem, for sacrifice to be offered for the sins of the dead, thinking well and religiously concerning the resurrection, (For if he had not hoped that they that were slain should rise again, it would have seemed superfluous and vain to pray for the dead,) And because he considered that they who were fallen asleep with godliness, had great grace laid up for them. It is therefore a holy and wholesome thought to pray for the dead, that they may be loosed from sins."

This, of course, would be much to the purpose, *if it were from canonical Scripture*; but we all know that it is from the *Apocrypha*—from a book, at the end of which the writer says, "I also will here make an end of my narrative. Which, if I have done well, and as it becometh the history, it is what I desired: but if not so perfectly, it must be pardoned me" (2 *Macc.* xv. 38, 39). Is not this a very plain renunciation of all claim to inspiration?

Furthermore, it is affirmed, that purgatory is situated in the centre of the earth, and that it forms one of the four compartments into which the infernal regions are divided. The

spirit, and thereby purify it too. But, hard as purgatory is to be *believed*, it is still harder to be *suffered*. Yes, it is hard, after having gone through the whole routine of the sacraments, and lived long a good Roman Catholic, then to die, and go into an intense fire. It is so hard, that I, for my part, prefer the religion of poor Lazarus,

punishment endured in this fictitious abode is said to be that of fire, "corporeal fire;" but how such an agent can act upon an incorporeal spirit, the Cardinal prudently confesses cannot be understood upon earth. All that can be known in this state is, that the pains of purification are so horribly severe, that no sufferings ever borne in this world can be compared with them. How long they continue is not reported; but it is thought that the process is very gradual, and that some will not be thoroughly cleansed till the Day of Judgment.

Some say that the torments are as terrible as those of Hell—the only difference being, that those of Purgatory are only for a time.

An awful prospect for the poor Romanist when dying! And those who are most earnest and conscientious, and have the deepest convictions of sin, must feel it most terribly;—of which there is a most affecting illustration in the case of Martin Boos, whose life, by Gossner, has been translated, and published by Seeley. An account of his last days has also been published, in a little tract, by the Monthly Tract Society. And it seems that, as a rule, all Romanists have to expect this dreadful torment: for we never hear or read of any one, however eminent—Pope, Bishop, or what else—for the repose of whose soul Masses are not said. Certainly as long as the Church of Rome celebrates Mass for them, she confesses that they are yet enduring the torments of Purgatory—that is, (though only for a period) the torments of the damned! Is not this a hard religion?

But "let the Bishops take care that the suffrages of the living faithful—viz., masses, prayers, alms, and other works of piety, which the faithful have been accustomed to perform for departed believers—be piously and religiously rendered, according to the institutes of the Church." Hence arise great gains to the priests. These masses must be paid for. An Irish Scripture reader, being asked of a clergyman what he thought of Purgatory, said, "I think, your Reverence, that it is the milch cow that never runs dry." It is, indeed, an inexhaustible source of gain to this Apostate Church. With it is closely connected the whole system of Indulgences.

whom the angels took straight to heaven; and of the penitent malefactor, who spent a part of the day on which he died in paradise. Surely St. Paul could not have been thinking of purgatory when he said, "To me to die is gain." But I forget: *he* lived before the time of the Roman Catholic religion.

2011

H. 14

OS 100

-1. 1000

### 32. *More about Penance.*

Let us hear both sides. In my former article on this subject, I objected to the translation *doing penance*, in the Douay Bible. But have the Roman Catholics nothing to say in justification of their rendering? I suppose that whatever they have to say is expressed in a certain note on Matthew iii. 2, "Do penance, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand," is the edifying translation of the passage. Our attention is then directed to this note, "*Agite pœnitentiam, metanoeite*, which word, according to the use of the Scriptures and the holy fathers, does not only signify repentance and amendment of life, but also punishing past sins by fasting and such like penitential exercises." This is the sage note.

Now here is an acknowledgment, that the ideas of *repentance* and *amendment* are intended in the original word. Why then is a translation of it adopted, which excludes both repentance and amendment? If the original includes them, yet their translation does not. A man may do penance, and yet neither repent nor amend—neither be sorry nor better. These translators must have thought, that repentance and amendment, though included in the original word, were of little importance, otherwise they would not have suppressed them in their translation. They must have judged them too insignificant to be taken notice of in their standard version! As for us Protestants, we think that *to be sorry* and *to reform* are very important parts of repentance.

But, besides repentance and amendment, they say the original word signifies "punishing past sins, by fasting,

&c." This is their assertion. Where are their proofs? I should like to see some of them; for the dictionaries tell us another story. Well, they appeal to the Scriptures and the fathers: "according to the use of the Scriptures and the holy fathers." Here are two authorities, though of very unequal weight in my estimation. I wish these translators had said, where the Scriptures use this word in their sense. I suppose they would, if they had been able. The truth is, the word is never so used. It does not include this idea of theirs. *Punishing!* Repentance does not mean punishing. *Punishing past sins!* This is no very eligible phrase. It is much too figurative for an explanatory note. And punishing them, how? *By fasting!* How does fasting punish sin? I cannot see how any fasting punishes sin; but I am sure the Roman Catholic fasting does not. Do you know what Roman Catholics mean by fasting? Not abstaining from food. No, to be sure; but changing their kind of food. Only abstain from *certain meats*, according to the prediction, 1 Tim. iv. 3, and you may eat what else you please. Fasting, according to the opinions held by Roman Catholics in the region of country where I live, and I suppose it is so elsewhere, consists in reducing one's self down to the low diet of *fish* (after all their kinds), *eggs, oysters, terrapins*, with all manner of *vegetables*, and every variety of *dessert*! This is fasting, because there is no butchers' meat eaten. You may eat what is sold anywhere else but in the *shambles*. Now I cannot see any thing very *punitive* in such fasting; nor man's sin must be exceedingly sensitive to feel the infliction of such abstinence. I do not believe that sinners to be *starved* out of the soul in that way.

It is well enough sometimes, to try the value of an explanation upon a passage in which the thing explained occurs, as for example, "God now commendeth all men every where to punish their *past sins* by fasting and such like penitential exercises" (see Acts xviii. 30). How does that sound? Do you really think that it is what the Lord meant?

### 33. *A Fast-day Dinner.*

Some plain, honest people may be surprised at the heading of this article, because it implies a dinner of some sort on a day of fasting; whereas, according to their old-fashioned notions, there should be no dinner at all on a fast-day. And truly fasting did formerly imply *partial* at least, if not *total* abstinence from food during the period of the fast. It was thought, that eating to the *full* was incompatible with genuine fasting. Indeed it was considered, that eating at all broke a fast. I suppose no one doubts, that Daniel, Nehemiah, Ezra, and the pious Jews in general, abstained entirely from food on their days of fasting. Who has an idea that they ate any dinner on those days? But mind has marched a great way since those men flourished. Whether its march has always been *forward*, I leave others to determine. *Now*,—according to the views which prevail in that church which professes that she cannot go wrong, and makes no mistakes, even when she contradicts herself,—abstinence is not essential to a fast; and a fast-day dinner, so far from being no dinner at all, as some puritanical Christians still contend it should be, is a rare repast—one of the very best dinners in the whole week. I ought to say here that some protestants have imbibed this doctrine of the infallible church, and very complacently practise according to it. We have a great many Protestants among us, who do not *protest* as thoroughly or as strenuously as we think they should.

What put me in mind of this subject was the following incident. As I was sitting at table the other day, the topic of conversation was a very delicate preparation of eggs. I took no particular interest in it, until one of the company remarked that, when she resided in the family of Mr. A., a distinguished Roman Catholic, that dish was always a part of their fast-day dinner. This arrested my attention. “Fast-day dinner!” exclaimed I, “Who ever heard of a dinner on a fast-day? It is not possible they have a dinner at Mr. A.’s on fast-days!” “Dinner!” replied the person, “I never

desire to eat a better." This made me curious to enquire, what constituted the fast-day dinner at Mr. A.'s table. Well," said she, "to begin, a *rock fish* dressed with eggs and butter (no mean affair this, where there is an appetite,) *eggs* prepared in two ways, and *oysters*." "They dispense with *vegetables*, I presume," said I. "O no," she rejoined; and to this I readily assented, for I had forgotten myself in supposing that they dispensed with vegetables. Timothy does not prophesy of the antichrist, that he shall command to abstain from vegetables, but only from "*meats,\** which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving." "Well, surely," said I, "they have no *dessert* on their fast-days?" "How you talk," said she, "they have the very best, and every variety." "And they call *that* a fast-day dinner? and do they suppose that they fast when they eat it?" "Certainly," said she. "Well, I suppose it is because they eat very *sparingly* of what is set before them." "You are mistaken," replied my informant, "*quantity* has nothing to do in the matter. It is not the quantity eaten that constitutes a fast, but the *kind*." There the conversation ended, but my thoughts proceeded on. And this, thought I, is fasting. So the church teaches, and millions on their way to the judgment believe it. What dupes! how deceived! to suppose that this is fasting. If not deceived themselves, what insulters of God, to endeavour to palm it off on Him as fasting! A *change of food* is fasting! To eat *different things* on one day from what we do on other days, is to keep a fast! Admirable doctrine!

---

### 34. *The Mass.*

There is a great deal of the phraseology of the Romish church which is not a little peculiar, not to say *outlandish*. The Christian reader, who is not very familiar

---

\* This is a bad argument. *Bromata*, in the original Greek, includes all things eatable: some of which the Apostate Church forbids the use of, at certain times: but the Apostle does not specify which, or of what kind.

with other authors than those who by inspiration wrote the Bible, does not know what to make of these terms, when he comes across them in books professing to treat of Christianity. "The mass, the mass," he repeats to himself, "what is that?" He has read his Bible through and through, but he has found nothing about the mass there. He thinks it ought to be there, if it is any part of Christianity. Why should apostolical Christians have been silent on a subject, on which those who claim to be their direct descendants are so loquacious? He does not even meet in his Bible with any doctrine or rite, to which the word *mass* seems at all appropriate. He would not object to the word, if he could find the *thing* there. It never occurs to him, that, by the mass, Roman Catholics can mean the ordinance of which the institution is recorded by Matthew, in his 26th chapter, and by three other sacred writers; and which we commonly speak of as the Lord's Supper. But that is what they mean by it. Then, they tell us, the first mass was said. In the Douay Catechism we find these questions and answers: Q. "Who said the first mass? A. Jesus Christ. Q. When did he say it? A. At his last supper." Here is question and answer for it, if not *chapter and verse*. The Biblical reader will please to bear in mind, whenever hereafter he reads the narrative of that transaction, that the writer is giving an account of the first mass that was ever *said*.

But they may call it mass, if they please; and they may speak of Christ's instituting the ordinance as his saying mass. Words are nothing; though it is certainly best that they should be well chosen and fitly applied. Do they mean by their mass, what we mean by the Lord's Supper? that is the main point. But the truth is they mean by it as different a thing as you can well imagine. Just hear what "The Christian's Guide" says on the subject: "I profess likewise, that in the *mass* there is offered to God a true, proper and propitiatory sacrifice for the living and the dead." Christ, they say, offered it first when he said mass; and every priest now offers it

when he says mass. Well, reader, you and I must not judge rashly. We will look again at the account given of the matter in the Bible ; and we will see if we can find in it any thing of the nature of a sacrifice. He took bread, and blessed, and brake, and gave to the disciples, and said, "Take, eat. And He took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it." Where is any *sacrifice* here, and especially where is any *propitiatory* sacrifice ? Does the account we have of sacrifices in the Old Testament, and in the epistle to the Hebrews, accord with what was done on this occasion ? The Roman Catholics say, that, when Christ performed these actions with the bread and wine, *he offered himself to God as a propitiatory sacrifice*. How does what He did bear even the least resemblance to the offering of a propitiatory sacrifice ? There was no bloodshedding—no life taken—as was the case in all propitiatory sacrifices under the law, and in the sacrifice which Christ made of himself on the cross ; and which has always, by Pagans as well as the disciples of the true religion, been considered as essential to a *propitiatory* sacrifice. I confess there was *something* offered. Bread and wine were offered. These might constitute a *eucharistic* sacrifice, but never a propitiatory one. If things of this kind can constitute a propitiatory sacrifice, then I do not see why Cain, who offered "of the fruit of the ground," was not accepted equally with Abel, who brought to the Lord "of the firstlings of his flock." But, whatever was offered, it was not offered to *God*. A sacrifice, to be a sacrifice, must be offered to God, as even the quotation from the Christian's Guide recognizes. But what was offered in this case was offered to the disciples. "Take, eat," He said *to them*. It is true the bread and wine were offered them, as the memorial of a sacrifice in which the body of Christ was to be broken and his blood shed ; but the memorial of a sacrifice is not a sacrifice. The emblematical representation of a thing is not the thing itself. Plainly there was no sacrifice in this transaction.

But again : if Christ in the eucharist offered himself

a sacrifice to God, as they affirm; and afterwards, as all admit, offered himself on the cross, then He *twice* offered himself; and, if so, the writer of the epistle to the Hebrews was under a great mistake, for he says, "Christ was *once* offered to bear the sins of many." "We are sanctified through the offering of the body of Jesus Christ *once for all*." (Heb. ix. 28, and x. 10.) Here is a contradiction. Which shall we believe? The Apostle of the Gentiles, or the Romish church? If Christ really offered himself in the eucharist—on the *table*, as the Roman Catholics contend—there was no need of his offering himself on the *cross*. His twice offering himself was quite unnecessary. If "in the mass there is offered up a true and propitiatory sacrifice," what need of another on Calvary? One "true, proper, and propitiatory sacrifice," is all that is wanted.

But, if the Roman Catholic doctrine be true, Christ has been offered not twice only, but innumerable times. In every mass that ever has been said, He has been offered. He is offered to-day, as really as He was on the day of His crucifixion. He is offered on earth, while He is interceding in heaven. Both parts of the priest's office, the propitiation and the intercession, are going on at the same time—a thing unheard of in the history of the priesthood! Did the Jewish high priest, the type of Jesus,—our great high priest, execute both parts of his office at the same moment? Moreover, according to this doctrine, there was no propriety in Christ's saying on the cross, "It is finished;" for it is *not* finished yet, nor will it be, till the last mass is said. It depends on the will of the priest when it shall be finished. This, to me, is *shocking* doctrine. What! Can a priest cause Christ to be offered just when he pleases? My mind recoils from the notion. There is what, by a figure, is called the "crucifying of the Son of God afresh;" but this appears like doing it literally.

I know the Romanists make a distinction here. They say, and let them be heard, that Christ in the eucharist is offered in an *unbloody* manner, while the sacrifice on

the cross was bloody. And this distinction they lay great stress on. But I wonder that they do not see the consequence of this explanation—that, if the sacrifice is unbloody, it cannot be propitiatory; which, nevertheless, they say it is. Unbloody, yet propitiatory! Who ever heard of an unbloody propitiatory sacrifice? What Jew? What Pagan? A propitiatory sacrifice, be it remembered, is a sacrifice for atonement—a sacrifice with a view to the remission of sins. This all acknowledge. But “without shedding of blood is no remission,” (Heb. ix. 22) consequently no propitiatory sacrifice. Now here is no shedding of blood, they say; yet remission is effected by it! It is a *propitiatory* sacrifice, notwithstanding. Who does not see the contradiction? They must take back their admission that it is unbloody, or else acknowledge that it is not propitiatory. They cannot hold to both without self-contradiction.

The reader sees, that this doctrine of the Roman Catholic church subverts that great principle in the divine government, that “without shedding of blood is no remission”—a principle not merely inscribed on the page of the Bible, but written with the finger of God on the mind of man. The conscience of the veriest pagan reads it there. If a sacrifice may be propitiatory, though unbloody, not a victim that bled under the Jewish economy need have been slain; and *Christ need not have died!* The doctrine of the mass, therefore, that a sacrifice may be propitiatory, though bloodless, undermines the Gospel.

One inference more from their doctrine I must not forget. It is this. If in the eucharist a propitiatory sacrifice is offered, then a propitiatory sacrifice may be effected by mere *action*. No *passion* whatever is necessary to it—expiation is made without any *suffering*—made by a mere *doing!* Is this truth? Can *antiquity* be pleaded for this doctrine? Can that be the *oldest* religion which cherishes and teaches it?

There is *no* sacrifice in what is improperly called the

mass—least of all a *propitiatory* sacrifice. The doctrine is error—error in a capital particular—on a fundamental point—gross and most pernicious error. What then shall we think of a church, which not only inculcates it, but gives it the greatest prominence ; and makes the service connected with it the main thing in its religion ? I have my thoughts. The reader must have his. I reserve some things on the mass for a future communication.

---

### 35. *More about the Mass.*

But before I proceed to the Mass, I wish to add a word about *relics*. In my communication on that subject, I referred to Bellarmine as quoting from the Old Testament in support of the doctrine of relics. Since then, I have recollected a fact which makes me wonder that a Romanist should ever appeal to the Old Testament for authority in favour of relics. The reader probably knows, that no relics are more common among the Roman Catholics, and none more highly valued, than the *bones* of deceased saints and martyrs. Now, if Numbers xix. 16, be consulted, it will be found that, under the Jewish dispensation if a person so much as touched the bone of a man, he was ceremonially unclean for seven days ; and he had to submit to a tedious process of purification, before he could be restored to the privileges of God's worship, from which he had been temporarily excluded in consequence of that contact. This being the case, it is pretty certain, that the bones of the dead were not handled and cherished as relics by the pious Jews, as they are by Roman Catholics. There was nothing which the Israelite more carefully avoided, than some of those very things which are now carried about and shown as relics. Therefore, I say, it is not best to go so far back as the Old Testament for testimony in favor of relics.

But with respect to the mass. It is known, I suppose, that they quote Scripture in favor of the mass.

That circumstance however proves nothing. Scripture is not always aptly quoted. It should be remembered, by those who are prone to think it in favor of a doctrine, that its abettors appeal to the Bible in its support, that Scripture was once quoted to prove the propriety of the Son of God casting himself down from the pinnacle of the temple. It is always advisable to refer to the quotation and to see if it makes in favor of the doctrine. The principal passage which the Roman Catholics adduce in support of their mass, is that concerning Melchizedek, in the 14th chapter of Genesis. Abraham and his armed servants were on their return from "the slaughter of the kings," when they were met by this distinguished personage. The record of the occurrence is as follows: "And Melchizedek, king of Salem, brought forth bread and wine; and he was the priest of the Most High God. And he blessed him.—And he gave him tithes of all." Here is the text, reader. Now the doctrine deduced from it is this, that "in the mass there is offered to God a true, proper, and propitiatory sacrifice for the living and the dead." Q. E. D.

Do not smile at the incongruity of the text and the doctrine—the distance of the conclusion from the premises. Sacred things are to be handled seriously. I know the reader only smiles at the *logio* of the thing. But he should remember, that they do the best thing they can, when they quote this passage in favor of their mass. If there were any other Scripture more appropriate and more to the point than this, they would quote it. I have no doubt that the intelligent Roman Catholic is ashamed of this reference to the Bible in behalf of the mass. He sees that it has no bearing on the case. It is not to compare, in point of appropriateness, with the tempter's quotation referred to above.

Just observe *first*, that it was as *king*, not as *priest*, that Melchizedek brought forth the bread and wine. "Melchizedek, *king* of Salem, brought forth the bread and wine." It was an act of royal bounty—an exercise of kingly hospitality. True, it is said immediately after,

that he was a priest as well as a king; but that is said in reference to what follows, not what precedes. "And he was priest of the Most High God. And he blessed him." In his capacity of king he brought forth bread and wine. In his exercise of his priestly office he blessed Abraham. To bless, we know, was one part of the priest's office. (Numbers vi. 23.) His bringing forth bread and wine had nothing to do with his being a priest. What proves this view of the passage correct is, the manner in which the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews refers to it. In his *seventh* chapter he introduces Melchizedek as a priest, and in that character, as the model of Christ's priesthood; and he speaks of his blessing Abraham, but says not a word about his bringing forth bread and wine. Why is not this circumstance—this most material circumstance according to the Romish notion—alluded to, if in it he acted as a priest and as the sacerdotal type of Christ? Why does the apostle, when speaking of him as a priest, mention only his benediction of Abraham? Now if, as I think is manifest, he brought forth bread and wine, not in the exercise of his office as *priest*, but as a king, it overturns the Roman Catholic argument at once.\*

But *secondly*, consider what, in all human probability, was the object of the bread and wine. Would any one, in reading the passage, suppose it could have been for any other purpose than refreshment? What an idea! to come out to a people returning hungry and weary from the toils of conflict, with a sacrifice—a propitiatory sacrifice, too—the mass—with bread and wine, not to be eaten and drunk, but to be offered to God! What more unnatural than such a supposition! On the other hand, what more natural and proper, than to bring forth, for those fatigued soldiers, "wine that maketh glad the heart of man, and bread which strengtheneth man's heart," to refresh them? It was just what, under the circumstances, they needed.

---

\* This is exceedingly well put by our author. The argument is cogent, and well stated in this paragraph. A. S. T.

In further proof of the correctness of this view of the passage, we find that Abraham recognized the priesthood of Melchizedek, not by receiving bread and wine at his hands, but by giving him tithes. "And he gave him tithes of all."

We see, then, there is no proof \* of any sacrifice in this transaction. There was nothing offered to God. What was offered, was to Abraham and his company. But if the offering were to God, it could only constitute an *eucharistic* sacrifice. † Bread and wine might be offered as thank-offerings. But a bloodless propitiatory sacrifice was unknown under the Old Testament. ‡ Whatever view we take of the passage, it cannot make for the mass. That which was offered was only bread and wine. The Roman Catholics do not pretend, that they were changed into the body and blood of Christ. Melchizedek lived nearly 2000 years before Christ had a body. How could transubstantiation take place so long before the incarnation? But if simple bread and wine were offered, then the act of Melchizedek, if any thing more than an example of hospitality, was rather the model of the Protestant Lord's Supper, than of the Roman Catholic mass. And here it may be observed, that Melchizedek does not seem to have denied the cup to the laity, as later priests have done, Oh no, it was the Council of Constance, so late as the 15th century, that established that custom.

\* Nor even the least appearance of it.—A. S. T.

† It is worthy of note, that we do not read one word about *sacrifices of thanksgiving*, till we come to the various sacrifices of the Law, as appointed in Leviticus i.—vii; and especially Lev. vii. 12, 13, 18, in which verses we have the first mention of *sacrifices of thanksgiving*. The sacrifices before the giving of the Law to Israel, seem to have been, all of them, whole burnt offerings.  
A. S. T.

‡ Except in one instance, Lev. vii. 13, (compare Heb. ix. 22) and this was evidently a purely exceptional case. It should not, however, be passed by; for the Romanists make the most of it.

But Roman Catholics have another argument from Scripture in favour of their mass. It is derived from the perpetuity of Christ's priesthood. If, say they, Christ is a priest for ever, and "every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices," there must be a perpetual sacrifice, else He would be a priest without exercising priestly functions. But do they not see, that this is to suppose Christ a priest after the order of Aaron, and not after that of Melchizedek? It is true the Aaronic priests offered sacrifices during the whole term of their priesthood. They stood "daily ministering, and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices." But what is said of Christ? He "needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice—for this he did once, when he offered up himself." (Heb. vii. 27.) And again: "But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God." (Heb. x. 12.)\* Yet the Roman Catholics say He *needeth* daily to offer up sacrifice, and that *He*, as the Aaronic priests, offers oftentimes the same sacrifice! They make Christ to resemble the Jewish priests, in those very particulars in which the apostle says He stands in contrast to them!

As to Christ being a priest *for ever*, if that means any thing more than is expressed in Heb. vii. 24, where He is said to have "an unchangeable priesthood," that is,

\* The Romanists mis-translate this important verse; which is thus made to support their Anti-Christian notion. It stands thus in the Douay Bible; "But this man OFFERING," (the present participle instead of the past) "one sacrifice for sins, for ever sitteth on the right hand of God." And, N.B., by again substituting the present for the past (*sitteth* for *sat down*) and connecting the words *for ever* with what follows, instead of with "*having offered*" which goes before, they, in effect, deny also the second coming of Christ. He *sat down* on the right hand of God; but He does not sit there FOR EVER; for He will come again to judge the quick and the dead. The true meaning is, that *He offered one sacrifice for ever*—i.e., of everlasting value; as appears from comparing verse 12 with 10 and 14, and ix. 11. 12 and 25—28.

a priesthood that passes not from one to another as did the Aaronic, it is explained in the succeeding verse, where it is said, that "He ever liveth to make intercession." He is a priest for ever, because He ever liveth to make intercession. It is not at all necessary that He should ever live to offer sacrifice, in order to his being a priest for ever. Intercession is as much a part of the priest's office as sacrifice. And here I would ask, whether the Jewish high priest was not as much a priest when he went into the most holy place to sprinkle the blood of the sacrifice, and to burn incense, as when, before he entered, he was engaged in offering the sacrifice? Undoubtedly he was. He offered no sacrifice while he was in the holy place. He went in for another purpose altogether. So Christ, the great antitype, has entered "not into the holy places made with hands, which are the figures of the true; but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us." (Heb. ix. 24.) And there he remains. He has never come out. He had no need to come out to offer another sacrifice, as the Jewish high priest had. "By *one* offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified." Were another sacrifice necessary, He would return in person to earth to offer it; nor would it be "under the form of bread and wine;" for the apostle argues, in Heb. ix. 25, 26, that He must suffer as often as He offers himself—that he cannot be offered without suffering. Yet the Douay Catechism says, He "continues daily to offer himself." He is sacrificing, according to them, while He is interceding—sacrificing in the place appropriated to intercession, and offering himself without suffering! The Bible tells us, "Christ was *once* offered," but that "He *ever* liveth to make intercession." It makes the perpetuity of his priesthood to consist in his intercession. The Romish doctrine, on the other hand, teaches us that He is *continually* offered, and *therefore* a priest for ever. And yet they appeal to the Bible in proof of their doctrine!

### 36. *The Host.*

Here is another of the *peculiar* terms of the Roman Catholic religion. Protestants commonly use the word to signify an army, or a great multitude. But Romanists mean by it *one* thing. It is the name they give to the consecrated wafer in the Eucharist. Wafer! What has a wafer to do with the Eucharist? We read that our Saviour took *bread*, and blessed, and brake, and gave it to his disciples; but we read nothing about any wafer. If by wafer the same thing is meant which we mean by bread, yet why this change of names? Why not call it what Christ called it? Why seek to improve upon things as they were left by Him?

When the wafer, the thin piece of bread, is consecrated; that is, when a blessing has been invoked, and thanks have been given, for that is all that Christ did, (the same precisely which He did when He fed the multitudes; in which case not even Roman Catholics contend that there was any transubstantiation of the bread into another substance; and if no such effect was produced on that bread by the blessing and thanksgiving, how should the same produce such an effect on the bread of the sacrament?)—then it is no longer called a wafer. It is true, St. Paul calls it the same afterwards that he called it before. But not so the Roman Catholics. Now they call it the *host*, a word derived from the Latin *hostia*, signifying victim, or sacrifice.

But why change its name? And above all, why give it so different a name? One minute to call a thing a wafer, and the next a victim, a sacrifice! and when nothing but a prayer has intervened. Has it become so different a thing that it deserves so different a name? I know the Romanists say a great change has taken place in its nature, and that, therefore, it ought to have a new name. Well, I am open to conviction. When a great change has taken place in any thing—such a change

that the original substance of the thing has totally departed, which is the greatest change any thing can undergo—it commonly appears to the senses different from what it did before. But the wafer and the host *look* exactly alike, and they *smell* alike, and *taste* and *feel* precisely alike. The *form* is the same it was before ; and, by every test by which the *substance* can be examined, it is found to be the same. Yet they say, the two things are as unlike as bread, and the body, soul and divinity of Christ! And this, on pain of perdition, must be believed, though the senses all exclaim against it ; and reason, that calm faculty, almost getting into a passion with the absurdity of the doctrine, cries out against it ; and though all experience be against it. And in favor of it, there is, what ? Why, Christ said, “This is my body,” speaking as Paul did, when he said, “And that rock *was* Christ ;” and as He Himself did, when He said, “I *am* the door.” Did any one ever contend that Christ was, literally, a *door*, or a *rock* ? Oh, no. Why, then, is it contended, that the bread was literally his body ? It is so said ! And are not the other things also so said ? It is strange the Romanists should contend for a literal interpretation in the first case, while they will not allow it in the other cases.

But if they contend for a strictly literal interpretation of “This is my body,” why do they not abide by such an interpretation ? Why do they say, as in the Christian’s Guide, page 14, that “in the most holy sacrament of the Eucharist, there is truly, really, and substantially, the body and blood, *together with the soul and divinity* of our Lord Jesus Christ ?” If Christ says it is his body, He does not say it is his soul and divinity. Where do they get that from ? They say it is his body, because He says it is. But why do they say it is his soul and divinity also, when He does not say so ? You see they do not interpret the passage literally, after all.

But what do the Roman Catholics do with this host ? Principally, two things.

1. They *adore* it. The Bible says, “Thou shalt

worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shalt thou serve." But Roman Catholics worship the host. Yes; but is not Christ to be worshipped, and do they not hold that the host is Christ? Suppose they do hold so; does it follow, that every thing is as they hold it to be? And if, in this case, the fact be different from what they hold it to be, is not their worship idolatry, whatever they may verily think? Paul verily thought that he ought to do many things contrary to the Name of Jesus of Nazareth. But did his verily thinking it was his duty, make it so, or exculpate him? No: he ought to have been better informed.\* And Roman Catholics ought to be better informed, than to suppose that the host is Christ—a wafer, God—a bit of bread, not only the body, but the very soul and divinity of Christ! I say they ought to know better. And, if they do not, they must take the consequences of such ignorance.

2. The other thing which they do with the host is to *eat* it. This is all very well on our theory. It is bread; and what is bread for but to be eaten? Christ tells us to put it to this use. He says, "Take, *eat*." But, on their supposition that it is bread no longer, it is no longer proper to be eaten. Its nature being so changed, there ought to be a corresponding change in its use. If it is to be adored, it is not to be devoured. Common sense teaches this. These two uses of it, adoring it and eating it, are incongruous to each other. One of them at least ought to be dispensed with. If they continue to eat it, they ought to give up adoring it. But if they must have it as an object of worship, they should cease to use it as an article of food. Any body can tell you, that you ought not to eat what you worship. *Cicero* thought such a thing could not be. In his work on

---

\* And he looked upon himself as the very chief of sinners, because he had done that which was really enormous wickedness,—though "ignorantly and in unbelief," he thought at the time, that he ought to do it. 1 Tim. i. 12—16. See also John xvi. 2, 3.

Theology, he asks, "Was any man ever so mad, as to take that which he feeds upon for a God?" But Cicero did not live late enough, else he could not have asked that question. Papal Rome has far outdone Pagan Rome.

If I believed in transubstantiation, I would never receive the Eucharist. I know that I must *spiritually* eat the flesh and drink the blood of Christ, that I may have life in me; but I could never *literally* eat what I believed to be my divine Saviour. What, take him actually between my teeth! chew and swallow what I had just before worshipped and adored! Let not the language be objected to. It is unavoidable. Rather let horror be felt at the *thing*. I would not speak lightly of sacred things, nor untenderly of the opinions of others: but the idea of adoring and eating the same object is shocking to me. Some readers will, perhaps, say that I must misrepresent the Roman Catholics—that it is impossible they should believe so. Let such convict me of misrepresentation, if they can, and I will take the first opportunity of retracting.\*

\* The fact is, that the Roman Missal, in the Rubrics *De Defectibus*, suppose that things much more disgusting may happen to the Host: for they tell the Priest what he is to do, if the consecrated Host should be "taken away by some animal !!!" Neither is this, by any means, the worst.

*Rubric No. 14 (De Defectibus in Ministerio ipso occurrentibus)* is so disgusting, that I do not like to quote it in a work intended to be popular.

Another of these Rubrics (No. 5) very gravely tells us what is to be done: "If a fly, or spider, or something else have fallen into the chalice,—after consecration." . . . If the priest "has no nausea, nor fear any danger, let him take it with the blood!"

A. S. T.

### 37. *Priests.*

Where are we? Under what dispensation are we living? One would suppose, from hearing so much said among a certain class of people about *priests*, and their offering *sacrifice*, that the Old Testament dispensation—the dispensation of types and shadows—was still in force: and that the Messiah, the substance and antitype, was yet to come. Priests were a sacred order of men under the Jewish dispensation, and sacrifice constituted an important part of divine service. But, under the Christian dispensation, there is no order of priests, neither are any literal sacrifices offered. We have, indeed, under this dispensation, a great High Priest, Jesus, the Son of God; who, having once offered Himself to bear the sins of many, has passed into the heavens for us, where He ever lives to make intercession; and He makes all his disciples, in an important sense, both, “kings and priests unto God” (Rev. i. 6); even as also *Peter*, who is prime authority with us all, testifies. Addressing the Christians to whom he wrote, he says, “Ye are an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices.” (1 Pet. ii. 5.) This priesthood, which Peter recognises, is very different from the Roman Catholic priesthood. All Christians share equally in the New Testament priesthood; and these priests are set apart to offer up *spiritual* sacrifices, or as it is said (v. 9), that they “should show forth the praises of God.” This is not the object of the Roman priesthood, neither are its functions performed by all the faithful.

The truth is, the Roman Catholic priesthood, that large and influential body of ecclesiastics, has no more warrant and authority for its existence from Christ, than it has from Mohammed. There is no more in the *Bible* in favor of such an order, than there is in the *Koran*, and perhaps not so much. Christ instituted no such

office—authorized no such characters in his church. “He gave some apostles, and some prophets, and some evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers;” but He gave none priests. And those he gave, or appointed, “for the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ;” not for saying mass, offering sacrifice, burning incense, hearing confessions, and the like of those things. Christ appointed no officer to perform such functions as these. I have quoted from Eph. iv. 11, 12. In 1 Cor. xii. 28, we have another enumeration of the various officers which God has set in the church; but there is not a word about priests. They are a class of persons not at all needed under the Christian dispensation. The great High Priest of our profession answers every purpose. He has offered the sacrifice which is efficacious to put away sin—has shed that blood which cleanseth from all sin; and He ever liveth to be our advocate with the Father. Neither for propitiation, nor for intercession, need we any other priest. Other priests are quite out of place since He has come.

If Christ instituted an order of priests, why do we not read anything about them in that choice piece of ecclesiastical history, the Acts of the Apostles? It is very strange. We read about Jewish priests in the Acts, and mention is made of the priests of Jupiter; but not a word do we hear of any Christian priests. Who were they? What were their names? Stephen was a deacon; Philip was an evangelist; Paul was an apostle; Peter (to use his own words, 1 Peter v. 1,) was an elder; and there were many who were addressed as bishops. But who was a priest? If Paul was, why does he not sometimes call himself so in the introduction of his Epistles? Was he ashamed of the office? Peter says he was an elder or presbyter, but gives no hint of his having been a priest. He seems to have had no idea of his being a priest, in any other sense than as being one of that “holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices,” which all true believers compose.

If the priesthood be a Christian order of men, why does Paul, in writing to Timothy and Titus, take no notice of it? He gives the qualifications of bishops and deacons, but says nothing about those of priests. Were they to have no qualifications? Must a bishop be "blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, apt to teach," &c., and might a priest be any thing he pleased, in these respects? Might any body be a priest? If not, the silence of the Apostle is decisive. Any one may see now, why the Romish priests do not like the Bible. Who likes to be treated, by book or man, with *silent* contempt? The priests will never forgive the Evangelists and Apostles for having passed them by in the way they have done. Never. And they will never let their people have the genuine Bible. If they do, they will lose the people.

I suppose it is scarcely necessary to say, that if Romanists meant no more by a priest, than some of our Protestant brethren mean by the word, namely, a presbyter, (of which *priest*,\* as used by *them*, is but an abbreviation) there could have been no occasion for this article. But they mean by a priest, a real *sacerdotal* character, as much as the priest of the Old Testament was—one who literally offers sacrifice. They pretend that their priests offer sacrifice now—and that, whenever *they* perform mass, a true, proper, and propitiatory sacrifice, for the living and the dead, is offered by them. And if you ask them ~~what they offer~~, they tell you that they offer Christ—that, under their hands, He ~~becomes~~ again, and as often as they choose to make him so, a propitiatory sacrifice—that He is as *really* offered by them in their missal service, as He was by himself on Calvary; only now He is offered in an unbloody manner! This is what their priests do. A priest must have somewhat to offer. He is ordained to offer gifts

---

\* *Presbyter* having been shortened into *Prester* (French *prêtre*) and then *Prester* into *Priest*,  
A. S. T.

and sacrifices. Now, the Roman Catholic priest, finding nothing else to offer, pretends to reoffer Christ. For all this—for this priesthood—and for this sacrifice—every one knows, there is no more authority in the Bible, than there is for the Hindoo suttee—the burning of widows alive.

---

### 38. *The Celibacy of the Clergy.*

This is the Roman Catholic doctrine: but is it *Bible* doctrine? I believe, however, that the Roman Catholics say it is no part of doctrine, but of *discipline*. This is a sorry evasion. It amounts to a confession, that some of their ecclesiastical practices have no warrant in Christian doctrine. It is saying, that it is a part of their discipline that their clergy *do* not marry, but no part of their doctrine that they *should* not.

But let us see how this doctrine or discipline, or by whatever name it may be called, tallies with the Scriptures; and, as we proceed, we shall see why the Romanists are unwilling that the people should read the Bible. We shall see what a world of trouble it would occasion the priests, were the laity to be in the habit of reading it. Suppose, for example, an intelligent Roman Catholic to take up Paul's *first* epistle to Timothy for perusal. Well, he reads along until he comes to the third chapter, where he finds Paul telling Timothy what a bishop must be. He must be this and that, and among other things "the husband of one wife." The reader is shocked. "Why, what does this mean? Our priests tell us that a bishop must not marry at all. Our church prohibits all her clergy from marrying. Which is right, our priests and our church, or St. Paul?" He concludes by reading on. Coming to verse 4th, he meets with this qualification of the bishop: "One that ruleth well his own house," i.e., his *family*. But how can he, if he is not permitted to

have a family of his own? He proceeds: "Having his children in subjection." His *children*—his children!! What, a bishop having children of his own, and having them collected in a family too! And then there follows a most provoking parenthesis: "For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?" His ruling his own house well is to be a criterion of his ability to take care of the church of God; and yet they say that he must not marry!

But the apostle passes on to speak of the *deacons*, and to say what they must be; and in verse 11th, he says what sort of wives they should have—"even so must their wives be grave," &c. So far from encouraging a doubt whether they should marry or not, Paul gives them directions for choosing a wife.

Now, need any one wonder that the priests do not want to have the Bible read by the people; a Bible which contains such statements as these; and which moreover declares, that marriage is honourable in *all*, without excepting the *clergy*? I do not wonder at it. Who would put into the hands of his children and servants, and recommend to their perusal and belief, a book containing statements so much at variance with his *oral* communications to them?

But there is a passage a little farther on, at the beginning of chapter iv., which, I suppose, constitutes with the priests a still stronger objection to the popular reading of this part of the Bible particularly. "The Spirit speaketh expressly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith—*forbidding to marry.*" Now, they are afraid that if the people were to read this, they might say, "Why, St. Paul must mean *our* church; it forbids to marry." And, as it might give the priests some trouble to show that He did not mean *their* church, the better way is not to let the people know that there is any such passage in the Bible.

### 39. *A Holier State than Matrimony!*

In one of his last letters to Mr. Breckenridge, Mr. Hughes, of Philadelphia, says that the Roman Catholic church does not forbid marriage; but, "she holds however, that there is a *holier state*." When I had read the letter thus far, I stopped; and I said to myself, "How is this? a holier state! I must look into this." So I thought a moment; and I came to the conclusion, that I could not hold with the Romish church in this thing, for the following reasons, among others.

1. Because, according to this doctrine, there is a holier state than that to which *Enoch* attained, and from which he was translated! He, we know, was a married man, and begat sons and daughters; and it would seem that he married *earlier* than any other patriarch! And yet all the while after his marriage, for three hundred years, he *walked with God*; and "he had this testimony, that he pleased God;" and God, in honor of his eminent piety, translated him "that he should not see death!" Now do you suppose I am going to believe, that the *state* of a Roman priest is *holier* than that of *Enoch*; and that *he* would have been a better man if he had let marriage alone? Never. I would ask, Do the priests do more than *walk with God*? Have they a higher testimony than that they please Him? Are they *translated*? What is the reason we never hear of their *holier state* being thus honoured?

2. If there be a holier state than matrimony, why did not the Jewish priesthood enjoin celibacy, as the letter tells us the law of the Romish priesthood does? Above all, why was not the high priest, whose functions were of the most sacred character, so much as *permitted* to occupy that holier state? He was not only authorised, but, it is believed, was *obliged* to marry.

3. The letter says, speaking of the Roman Catholic church, "the law of her priesthood enjoins celibacy, &c.

She does not choose them (those who marry) for her clergy." Truly she is very fastidious in the choice of her clergy. Why need *she* be so much more *particular* than Paul required Timothy and Titus to be in the choice of their clergy? *Their* bishops and deacons might have a wife; but, if any "wish to marry," *she* does not choose them for her clergy!

4. I thought when I read about *the holier state*, "what if all the world should aspire to the holier state?" Certainly, if it be holier, they ought to aspire to it. Priests are not the only persons who are commanded to be *perfect*.

Let the Romish priesthood no longer make such an *ado* about their celibacy, as a *holier state*. Protestants allow their clergy to do as they please in this matter. If they remain unmarried, it is all very well. At the same time they are not extremely solicitous, that their ministers should aspire to any holier state than that from which Enoch was translated.\*

\* It should be noted, that this condemnation of all Ecclesiastical persons to perpetual celibacy (abominable as it is in its principles, and in its natural consequences) is a master stroke of craft and policy on the part of the Church of Rome: for it cuts off every Ecclesiastic from all participation in the strongest ties and deepest feelings which bind a man to his country, in order that he may become the slave of the Church, and have no interest or concern but the interests and advantage of the Church of Rome;—not considering himself any longer as a citizen, or a subject, of his native Country, and its Government. This principle is clearly laid down in the Bull of Benedict XIV entitled "*Urbem Antibarum*," dated March 19, 1752, in which we find these words (§ 5).

"Since Ecclesiastics, as well as Foreigners, in wars, are no part of the State that injures, reason demands, that neither the persons of the one nor the other be injured, nor that they be disturbed in their property, as is read in the decretal: *Innovamus de Treuga et Pace*."

Whence it is evident, that the Church of Rome considers her Ecclesiastics as exempted from the character and responsibilities of subjects in the State in which they dwell; they, like Foreigners, are no part of the State; they belong to another

#### 40. Auricular Confession.

I have been thinking with myself, where is the authority for this doctrine and practice of the Roman Catholics?—whence came the idea of confessing sin to a priest? Every one admits that sin ought to be confessed: but why to a priest? Common sense would seem to dictate, that confession should be made immediately to the being offended; especially if he be easily accessible. If a child offends his father, does he confess the offence to some *third* person, when his father is near at hand too; and, above all does he select for that *third* person, an equally offending brother? Was ever such a thing heard of as this? Yet this is the Roman Catholic doctrine. It sends us to a brother as deep in the offence as we, to confess to him, that we have sinned against our father, when that father is close by; and when, moreover, he says, "Come to me!" I think both the brothers, the penitent and the priest, had much better go directly to the Father. I find that this is what they used to do in old times. I have been look-

---

Jurisdiction; and they are only responsible to their Ecclesiastical Superior,—that is, in fact, to the Authorities at Rome, and ultimately to the Pope, whose subjects and slaves they are. This also is evident from the Oath of "true obedience to the Roman Pontiff, Successor of St. Peter, Prince of the Apostles, and Vicar of Jesus Christ," which is imposed upon them by the Bull of Pius IV, *Injunctum nobis* (dated Dec. 9th, 1564). The Church of Rome well understands the necessity of severing all those natural ties which would bind a man to his native Country, and make him feel a lively interest in its independence and welfare. A man who has a wife and children has given hostages to his Country: every feeling of natural affection tends to make him faithful to his Country and to its Government. Sever those ties: extinguish these natural affections: make him feel as a lonely being in the earth: let him become a mere Ecclesiastic: and he is ready to become a Traitor to his Country and his Sovereign, whenever the interests of the court of Rome may require it.

A. S. F.

ing into the Bible, to discover how it was then; and I perceive that they all went to God to make their confessions. They did not stop at the priest. There were David, and Daniel, and Ezra, and Nehemiah, and I know not how many more. They all went with their sins directly to God. Read that precious psalm, the 51st. There is David before God. He confesses to the One he had offended. "Against thee," he says. And may we not use that psalm? May we not go and say "against thee?" Must we turn aside to a priest? The *publican* did not. He went straight on to God. And the *prodigal* did not stop short of his father. Why should we? *Why should Roman Catholics?*

I think the sinner should go on to God; and I do not like that Roman Catholic doctrine, because it stops him as he is going to God. The sinner is on his way to confess his sin to his Maker, and to implore of Him pardoning mercy; and it says to him, "You need not go so far—the priest will hear you confess—he can forgive you." I like much better the Protestant doctrine, which speeds and cheers the penitent on his way to God.

Nor can I see, why we want more than one mediator between us and God. Why is not Christ enough? How admirably qualified He is for his work? With one nature that reaches up to God, and another that reaches down to man, how excellently fitted is He to mediate for us! Do we want another between us and Christ? Oh no. Let the priest not put himself in the way. Jesus says, "Come unto Me;" we want no human priest between us, and our "great High Priest, that is passed into the heavens for us."

I may be very dull, but really I cannot see, for my part, what is the use of the priest, for surely he cannot forgive a sinner, unless he repents; and if he does repent, God forgives him, and then who cares whether the priest forgives him or not? If confession to the priest is intended to supersede confession to God, it is certainly a great mischief. If not so intended, it is ne-

less, for our being forgiven depends on the nature of our confession to God, as penitents or otherwise.

But they allege in support of their doctrine, a verse of Scripture: "Confess your faults one to another." I suppose the reason they allege this is, that it is the best they can find for their purpose. They must be hard pushed for authority, when they resort to that passage, "Confess your faults *one to another*." This implies something *mutual*. If I confess to the priest, he must confess to me, for it says *one to another*. This puts priests and all on a level. There is nothing *auricular* in this. Certainly we ought to confess our faults one to another, and to "pray one for another," as the same Apostle exhorts. But this is by no means the Romish doctrine of confession. That is quite a different thing.

On the whole, it is my opinion, that the world can dispense with this doctrine, and with the practice founded on it, as well as with any thing which it has in use.

---

#### 41. *A Mistake Corrected.*

In an article entitled "Auricular Confession," the writer stated, that, on looking into the Bible, he discovered that all the penitents mentioned therein went directly to God to make their confessions of sin, and not to the priests; and he spoke of David, Daniel, Ezra, and Nehemiah, as examples in point. He finds, however, that he was mistaken in saying, that they all confessed to God instead of to the priests. There is one exception, and he is willing that the Roman Catholics should have the advantage of it. It is the case of *Judas Iscariot*, recorded in Matthew xxvii. 3, 4. He did *not* go to God with his confession. He went to the chief priests; and it was to them he said, "I have sinned, in that I have betrayed the innocent blood." Here, we must confess, is an example of confession to a priest. But it is the *only* one, I believe, in the Bible. Judas also brought *money* (thirty pieces of silver) to the

priests; so that the Romanists have authority (such as it is) for that part of their practice. I am determined I will do the Romanists justice. They shall have the advantage of every particle of Scripture which really makes in their favor. It is well known that they need it.

But, poor man! he got nothing by going to the priests. It was their cruel and contemptuous treatment of him, as much as anything else, that determined him to go and hang himself. How differently even Judas would have been treated, if he had gone with a broken heart to our great High Priest Jesus! Ah! it would have been better to go to Him whom he betrayed, than to them to whom he betrayed him. I think I shall always go directly to Him, notwithstanding the example of Judas.

---

#### 42. *Purgatory.*

There are no worse reasoners than the Roman Catholics; and I suppose the cause of this is, that they are so little accustomed to reason. Men rarely do *well* what they are not used to do. The mind needs to be disciplined to thinking and reasoning, else it performs these operations but very indifferently. Hence you hear so many persons say *therefore*, when nothing follows; or, at any rate, that does not follow which they suppose. Of this, the Romanists, not being in the habit of thinking and reasoning, (their very religion prohibiting these operations of the mind), afford us some wonderful specimens. Between their premises and their conclusions, there is often so great a gulf, so deep and wide both, that I have wondered how they manage to get over it. Let us hear them on the subject of Purgatory. They feel as if they would like to have a little scripture for this dogma of theirs—a text or two; not for the satisfaction of the faithful (for to them it is sufficient that the Church believes the doctrine),

but to meet the heretics. But where shall they find in the Bible any thing favourable to purgatory? The Bible speaks plainly enough of *two* places beyond the grave, but it says nothing about a *third* place. It tells us of a *heaven* and a *hell*; but of an intermediate *purgatory* not a word. It is true that, some hundreds of years afterwards, certain writers speak of it as a Christian doctrine; but I want to know why the *older*, the *inspired* writers, say nothing about it. We read frequently in the Bible of being purged from sins, but, most unfortunately for the Roman Catholic doctrine, the purging is done *in this life*, not after death; and it is done, not by *fire*, as that doctrine asserts, but by *blood*. So that those passages in which *purging* occurs, do not help the Romish cause. Then they look in the Bible for the word *fire*; and they read of the fire that is not quenched; and of everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels. But this will not answer their purpose. This fire is everlasting, and for devils as well as wicked men. They never imagined a purgatory for devils. The fire of *their* purgatory is to be quenched.

If purgatory is full of souls, who are helped by the prayers of the faithful on earth, as Roman Catholics say, why, in the multitude of their exhortations, do the sacred writers never so much as give us a hint about praying for those poor suffering souls? What a cruel oversight it was in them!

I smile sometimes when I look at this doctrine of purgatory. But I repress the smile. Ludicrous as the doctrine is, it is still more pernicious. What does it do, that is so bad? Why, it turns away the attention of the soul from Christ. It says the very opposite of "Behold the Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world." And then it tells men, that they may not only live, but die wickedly, and yet entertain the hope of salvation. It proclaims the possibility of a *post-mortem* repentance and purification from sin. It emboldens men to go out of the world in impenitence, assuring them that though they do, yet prayers and

masses offered for them after death can save them. It denies that we are to be judged and dealt with according to the deeds *done in the body*; whereas, the Bible declares that, according to these, we are to receive.

On the whole, for this doctrine of purgatory there is neither scripture, nor reason, nor common sense. This, however, may be said of it. It is a *profitable doctrine*. Yes, a *capital speculation*. There is no doctrine which pays so well. You have heard of *Peter's pence*. Here his boasted successors get their *pounds*.

But there is a passage having fire in it, which they adduce as to the point. It is 1 Cor. iii. 15: "Yet so as by fire." These are the premises in the grand argument; and the conclusion is, there is a purgatory, a place of temporary punishment by fire after this life. Q. E. D. Those letters were never more out of place. If there existed independent and irrefragable proof from another quarter of the doctrine of purgatory, in that case it might be innocently imagined, that the Apostle had in his mind some remote allusion to it in this chapter: but that this proverbial phrase, "saved, yet so as by fire," signifying, as used by writers both sacred and profane, *a narrow escape out of a great danger*, should be relied on as the principal support of the doctrine, is truly marvellous! I always thought that the fire of purgatory was to *purify men's souls*; but the fire here spoken of is to *try every man's work*. Besides, it is not said that the person shall be saved by fire, but *so as by fire*; that is, with the like difficulty with which a man in a burning house is saved from its conflagration. A good man, who, on the precious foundation of Jesus Christ, builds worthless materials, such as wood, hay, stubble, shall suffer the loss of his work, yet he himself shall be saved, though with great difficulty, *so as by fire*. So much for the *main pillar* of purgatory.

But they point us to Matthew v. 25, 26: "Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and

thou be cast into prison. Verily, I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing." Now I would look the intelligent Roman Catholic, who refers to this in proof of purgatory, in the face, and ask him if he is in earnest? if he can think, that the doctrine of purgatory derives any support from that passage? What is it but a most excellent piece of advice, in reference to the settlement of differences among men? But they say, "Does not Christ, in Matthew xii 32, speak of a sin which shall not be forgiven, neither in this world, neither in the world to come; and does not this imply that some sins may be forgiven in the world to come?" It implies no such thing. That form of expression is employed but to strengthen the denial. Besides, how can they be said to be forgiven, if they are purged away by fire?

Ah, but does not St. Peter say that Christ went and preached to the spirits in prison? (1 Peter iii. 19, 20,) where were they but in purgatory? But were all the giant sinners before the flood in purgatory? \* If so, there may be some hope for us heretics. But why should Christ go to purgatory to *preach* to the spirits there? It is not by *preaching*, according to the Roman Catholics, that souls are liberated from purgatory, but by *prayers* and *masses* well paid for. And why should Christ select out the antediluvian sinners, and preach only to them? Indeed, I think the friends of purgatory had better give up that text; and not attempt to support their dogma by

---

\* On their own principles, it is evident that these antediluvian sinners could not have been in *Purgatory*, but in *Hell*: for they were *unbelievers* (the Greek word is translated in different places *unbelieving* and *disobedient*; and here the Vulgate translates it *unbelieving—qui increduli fuerant*), and certainly *unbelief* is not a *venial*, but a *mortal* sin (Mark xvi. 16). The Romanists evidently consider it as a mortal sin; for it is on account of *unbelief*, that is, of their peculiar doctrine, that they consign all us Protestants to hopeless damnation.

*Scripture*, but be content with *tradition*,—consoling themselves with the reflection, that, though nothing is *written* about it, yet it has been *handed* down.

As for us Protestants, we do not believe in *burning* out sin—in salvation by *fire*. We *protest* against it. We believe in the *washing* away of sin, and that by the blood of Jesus alone: “The blood of Jesus Christ, his Son, cleanseth us from *all* sin.” What is there left for fire to do? The spirits of the just made perfect ascribe no part of their salvation to fire. No. Their ascription is “Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood.” (Rev. i. 5.) How could souls just come up out of purgatory, where they have been hundreds, perhaps thousands of years, undergoing the purification of fire, unite in this song?

---

#### 43. *More about Purgatory.*

What low and unworthy thoughts the Romanists must have of the work of Christ and of the efficacy of his blood, that they should believe that, after He has done all He can for a soul, and his blood has exhausted its virtue on it, it has still to be subjected to the action of an intense flame, for no one knows how long, in order that the expiation of its sins may be complete, and its salvation perfected! What a doctrine! Why, according to this, Christ was premature in saying on the cross, “It is finished.” It was not finished, according to them. The expiation of sin was only begun on Calvary. It is completed in Purgatory! O God, I pray thee rid and deliver the mind of man from this dreadful delusion, so derogatory to thy dear Son, our blessed Saviour; and so injurious to thee, for it represents thee, who delightest in mercy, as punishing after thou hast pardoned; as requiring satisfaction from men, after thou hast accepted for them the satisfaction of Christ!

Now I know the reason why Roman Catholics are never happy in the prospect of death—why the dying votaries of that religion never exclaim, “O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?” It is because they are expecting to go into a place of fire. How can they be triumphant, in the “certain fearful looking-for of judgment and fiery indignation?” How can their religion be other than what it is, a religion of fear and foreboding?\*

I have a few more things to say upon this subject; one of them is this: If there was in the time of Christ, and his apostles such a place as purgatory, it must have been a place of little *note* and of little *use*:—of little *note*, for they say nothing about it; and of little *use*, because we hear of no one going thither. Lazarus did not go thither—neither did Dives—nor did the thief who was saved upon the cross—nor did Judas. Paul speaks of those Christians, who are *absent from the body, as present with the Lord*. Is Christ in purgatory? Is it there that believers go to be ever with Him? But hark! a voice from heaven! now we shall know how it is: “I heard a voice from heaven,” says St. John (Rev. xiv. 13), “saying unto me, Write, blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth; yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours.” They that die in the Lord *rest*. Then certainly they are not in purgatory.

---

\* See the Tract entitled, “The Last Days of Martin Boos,” published by the English Monthly Tract Society; (No. 144); which has been before referred to.

It is evident that Purgatory could not have been an Article of Faith in the fourth century; for Augustine (born A.D. 354, died 430), knew nothing of it as an Article of Faith; but speaks of it himself *very* doubtfully.

A. S. T.

#### 44. *A Strange Thing.*

I read the other day in a Baltimore newspaper the following article :

“OBSEQUIES.—This day the Prelates and Theologians of the Catholic Provincial Council, now in session in this city, together with several other priests, celebrated the solemn office for the repose of the souls of the Right Rev. Doctor Fenwick, of Cincinatti, and De Neker,\* of New Orleans. The Right Rev. Doctor Rosati celebrated the High Mass, attended by the proper officers. After the Gospel, the Right Rev. Doctor Purcell, Bishop of Cincinatti, ascended the pulpit and preached a funeral oration ; in which he ably portrayed, in accurate and pathetic language, the virtues and services of the deceased prelates, the former of whom fell a victim to the cholera, after years of laborious and successful exertions ; the latter was taken away in the bloom of youth and in the midst of his labors by the yellow fever. After the Mass, Doctor Rosati performed the usual obsequies.”

Having finished reading the article, I withdrew my eye, and said to myself, Where am I? I thought I was in the United States of America. But that cannot be. This can be no other than Spain, Portugal, or Italy. And what *century* is this? I always thought that I lived in the glorious *nineteenth*. But I must have made a mistake of *nine* at the least. This surely must be the *tenth* century ; the darkest of the dark ages—*seculum tenebricosum*, as the church historians call it—the *midnight of time*! “*This day the prelates—in this city—celebrated the solemn office for the repose,*” &c.

It occurred to me, that I might have read the paragraph incorrectly. I resumed the paper ; but still I read the same. I threw it down ; I sat and thought. Well now, this is a strange thing—praying for the repose of deceased saints !—and those, too, prelates of the

---

\* Query, Dr. Neker : for I suppose, by what follows, that he was Bishop of New Orleans : but I have no means of ascertaining the fact.

only true church—and prelates eminent for their “virtues and services”—dead a year, or thereabouts, and yet not at rest!—and this by the confession of their own church! What must become of the less renowned Roman Catholics, if the very best of their bishops are tossing and burning in purgatory a year after having sacrificed their lives in the service of God and their fellow-creatures; and need *solemn offices* said for the repose of their souls? I always thought that *rest* to the soul ensued immediately on the exercise of faith. Paul says (Heb. iv. 3), “We which have believed *do* enter into rest;” and Christ says (Matt. xi. 28), “Come unto Me, and I will give you rest; take my yoke upon you and learn of Me—and ye shall find rest unto your souls.” I always supposed it meant, that they should find the rest as soon as they came; and not after a long life, and a long purgatorial period after that. Above all, I had the impression, that, if never before, yet in the grave, good men find rest. I must have got that belief, I suppose, by reading what St. John says, “Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord *from henceforth*: yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest,” &c., or possibly from that other passage (Job iii. 17), “There the wicked cease from troubling, and there the weary *are at rest*.” But it seems I am wrong. Here are two bishops dead, yet not at rest! If what St. John says is true, here is a dilemma. Either those bishops did not die in the Lord, or they are at rest. Will the prelates say that they did not die in the Lord? I suspect not. They then must believe that they are at rest. And if so, why celebrate a solemn office for their repose?

Hoping it may not be a *mortal sin* (if it be only *venial*, I will risk it), I would ask, How the Romanists *know*, that these bishops of theirs are not at rest? Who told them so? Where did they learn it? It seems to me a *slander* on those men. Bishop Fenwick enjoyed an enviable reputation for goodness. I have often heard him spoken of by Protestants in terms of high commendation; and the article quoted speaks of “the virtues

and services" of both. And now, after they have been dead so long, to tell the world that they are not at rest, and that their repose must be prayed for! If Protestants had dared to suggest such a thing, we should never have heard the last of it.

But it seems not only a slander on these men, but also a *reflection* on Christ. How imperfectly, according to the Romanists, He must have done his work!—that even those esteemed his most devoted servants must toss and burn, nobody knows how long, after death, before the efficacy of his atonement will bring them to heaven! Where is the fulfilment of his promise, "Come unto Me, and I will give you rest. Ye shall find rest to your souls?" According to the prelates, &c., these bishops have not found it yet.

I would *dare* ask another question. How can the priests and prelates tell with such accuracy, how long a soul remains in purgatory before it is released? How do they know when to stop praying? I will not insinuate that they pray as long as the money holds out, and no longer; for in the case of the bishops, I suppose they *freely* give their prayers. I could not help thinking, if they did go first to purgatory, yet they may not be there now. A year is a long time to be in purgatory. Hours pass slowly while one is burning. Oh, is this a part of Christianity? Can it be? What an unsatisfactory religion, which will not allow its most eminent examples, its most virtuous votaries, to have repose even in the grave! *Credat qui vult, non ego.\**

---

#### 45. *Canonizing Saints.*

I was a good deal struck the other day, in reading in a Baltimore paper the following notice: "On Monday, the 17th of March, St. Patrick's day, a solemn HIGH MASS will be sung in St. Patrick's church, Fell's Point,

---

\* Believe it who will ; not I.

and the panegyric of the Saint will be delivered." It suggested some thoughts which I wish to communicate.

Why should the 17th of March be called St. Patrick's day? How is it his day more than yours or mine? What property had he in it more than others? He died on that day, it is true. But was he the only one who died on that day? Many thousands must have died on the same day. Does a man's dying on a particular day make it his? Ah, but he was a *saint*. How is that ascertained? Who saw his heart? I hope he was a good man, and a renewed person. But I think we ought to be cautious how we so positively pronounce our fellow-creatures saints. Especially should Roman Catholics; since even *Peter* himself, though, as they affirm, infallible, did not express himself so confidently; for he says in his first epistle (v. 12), of Silvanus, "a faithful brother unto you, *as I suppose*." But what if he was a saint?—every real Christian is a saint. If any one doubts this, let him consult the New Testament. I trust there were many saints on earth at that time; and, I doubt not, other saints died on that day as well as Patrick. I object altogether to the day being called his. I have no idea that the 365th portion of every year belongs peculiarly to St. Patrick. I have no notion of this parcelling out the year among the saints, and calling one day St. Patrick's, another St. Cecilia's, and so on. At this rate we shall have the whole year appropriated to dead saints.

Ah, but you forget that Patrick was *canonized*. The church made him a saint, and appropriated that day to him. But I have not much opinion of these *canonized* saints—the saints of human manufacture. I like the *sanctified* ones better. Our Protestant saints are "God's workmanship, created in Christ Jesus." But granting the 17th of March to be St. Patrick's day, why is it *kept*? What have we to do with it, who live so long after? Patrick died in 493, and here in the nineteenth century they are keeping his day! I think it is time to have done grieving for the death of St. Patrick, now that he

has been dead more than 1300 years, and especially when he died at the good old age of one hundred and twenty. Really, I think it is time that even the *Irish* Roman Catholics had wiped up their tears for him. Tears!—why, they do not keep the day in lamentation for him, but in *honor* and praise of him. High mass is to be *sung*, as it appears by the advertisement. Now singing expresses praise—and his *panegyric* is to be pronounced. It is wonderful what a disposition there is among the Romanists to multiply the objects of their religious honor. Oh that they were but satisfied to praise the Lord that made heaven and earth! But no—they must have *creatures* to do homage unto—angels; and saints of their own making; and above all the blessed Virgin, “our heavenly mother,” as some of them call her. It would really seem as if they had rather pay respect to any other being than to God! They cannot be satisfied with the mediation of Jesus. They must have creatures to mediate and intercede for them. They are always doing things, and keeping days, in honor of the saints. How much they talk about *tutelar saints* and *guardian angels*. It would appear as if they had rather be under the care of any other being than that of God.

Now the idea of still eulogising, panegyricizing, and praising, here in the United States, one St. Patrick, who died in Ireland in 493,—how absurd! How is piety to be promoted by it? I should like to know!

By the way, what is *high* mass in distinction from *low* mass? They differ in several respects. Among the peculiarities of high mass, this, I believe, is one, that it is more *expensive* than low mass. If you want high mass said for a poor suffering soul in purgatory, you have to pay more than you do if you are content with low mass. And so it should be, for the high mass is worth more. Low mass scarcely makes an impression on a soul in purgatory. It is high mass that does the business effectually and expeditiously.

As for us Protestants, we have nothing to do with these masses. We do not find anything said about

them in the Bible. The Romanist will pardon me, I hope, for alluding to the Bible. I am aware that it is no good authority with him,—except now and then a verse (entirely misunderstood), such as that about the *rock*, which they say was *Peter*, on whom the church was built, according to them! Only think now, a man that denied the *founder* of Christianity three times, with profane oaths, himself the *foundation* of the whole church! Nothing else for it to rest upon but Peter! But the beauty of it is, that this foundation should have had a long series of *fundamental* successors, down to the present Pope! I always supposed that, when a foundation is laid, there is an end of it, and that all after belongs to the superstructure. But this is a digression.

It strikes me that, in giving this notice, the priests should have used an easier word than *panegyric*. I wonder how many of our Irish brethren know what it means. But that “ignorance is the mother of devotion,” you know, is one of their maxims. What multitudes of them said, on the 17th of March, “Blessed St. Patrick.” Probably more than said, “Hallowed be thy name.” And every day how much more respect is paid among them to the *mother* than to the *Son*! It is as clear as demonstration can make any thing, that the Roman Catholic religion is *idolatrous*. Men may say, that it is a very *uncharitable* remark. But if any one will dare to say it is an *untrue* remark, I am ready to meet him. Let us inquire, *first*, what is *truth*. Then we will come to the question, what is *charity*. And we shall find, that charity is something which “rejoices in the truth.”

---

#### 46. General Lafayette not at Rest.

A few days since, I observed the following notice, taken from the Charleston Roman Catholic Miscellany: “There will be an office and high mass in the Cathedral on Monday, 30th inst. (June), for the repose of the soul of General Lafayette.” Also the following, taken from the Roman Catholic Herald: “A solemn

high mass will be sung on Tuesday next, the 29th inst. (July), at 10 o'clock, at the church of the Holy Trinity, corner of Sixth and Spruce, for the repose of the soul of the late Gen. Lafayette." The General died, it will be remembered, on the 20th of May. I did not know that he had been heard from since, any more than the rest of the dead. But the Charleston and Philadelphia editors seem to have had accounts of him up to as late a date as the 29th of July. Forty days after his death, according to the one account, and sixty-nine days according to the other, his soul was not at rest; and they give notice, that measures are about to be taken to procure its repose. I don't know where they got it: they do not say through what channel the intelligence came. They are very positive, however, in regard to the fact. I have often been surprised at the confidence with which Romanists make assertions, implying a knowledge of the condition of souls beyond the grave. One would suppose they had a faculty, peculiar to themselves, of seeing into the invisible world. With what positiveness they speak of this and the other as saints in glory, and even pray to them as such. I have often thought that many of the prayers of Romanists might be lost, from the circumstance of the persons to whom they are addressed not being in heaven.

We Protestants do not lose any prayer in that way. We do not pray to any being who we are not certain is in heaven. We speak with positiveness of the future condition of characters and classes of men—the righteous and the wicked—believers and unbelievers. The Bible does that. But we *do* not, we *dare* not speak of the condition of individuals with the same confidence; and specially we dare not say of this or that person who has died, that his soul is not at rest. We think it better to be silent concerning the spirit that has returned to God who gave it; and to wait for the great day to disclose the decision of the Eternal Mind on its case; and that especially if the person seemed to die in impenitence. We would not usurp the prerogative of

judgment. What Protestant, even though belonging to the Calvinists, as some of us do, would assert that the soul of such a man as Lafayette is not at rest?

But the Romanists are not so reserved. They pretend to know, not only who are saints in glory, but what souls are suffering in the fire and restlessness of purgatory. They can tell you the names of the persons. They have printed, in two of their papers at least, that the *good* Lafayette, as our countrymen are wont to speak of him, has not gone to rest. His body rests; but his soul, they tell us, has, as yet, found no repose. It has not obtained admittance into that place, where "the wicked cease from troubling, and the weary are at rest." The General lived a long time where the wicked cease not from troubling; and much annoyance received he from them, in the course of his patriotic and useful life; and many trials and fatigues he underwent for liberty and the rights of man. Now it seems to me, that the Roman Catholics take a great deal on them, when they say, that his soul is still subject to the annoyances and disquiet which were his lot on earth. Yet they do say so. They appoint a day, a good while after his death, to sing high mass for the repose of his soul. Of course they must believe that, up to that day, his soul is not in repose; else why seek its repose? If the person who inserted these notices were living in the papal dominions, or under the influence of Prince Metternich, or the ex-king Charles, I should not wonder at their proclaiming his soul not at rest; for Lafayette was never a favourite at Rome, Vienna, or in the court of Charles X. He loved liberty too well for that. But that American Roman Catholics, and, if the reader will not smile at the incongruity of the terms, *Republican Roman Catholics*, should assert such a thing, I am a little surprised. I almost wonder that the people do not resent it as an insult to the old general. If a Protestant minister should say from the pulpit, or through the press, that Lafayette is not rest, his church and his person would be hardly safe. But Romanists do it with impunity.

But why do the Roman Catholics suppose that Lafayette is not at rest? Is it because none are at rest when they die? Is this their doctrine? A comfortable religion, to be sure! According to this, how is it "gain to die?" Who would be "willing rather to be absent from the body?" Or how can it be said, "O death, where is thy sting?" since *here* it is, and sting enough. But he who wrote Phil. i., and 1 Cor. xv., and 2 Cor. v., was not a Roman Catholic. Or do they conclude Lafayette to be not at rest, because only saints find repose in death, and he was no saint? I wish all the saints of the church of Rome had been as good men as Lafayette. They have canonized worse men than he. I have never inquired curiously into the devotional character of the General, but I am possessed of no proof that he was not a Christian. Certainly, I find in his moral history no reason why they should be so positive that he is not at rest. They might have made the appointment conditional,—mass to be said for the repose of his soul, if not at rest. But they insert no condition. They are sure he is not at rest.

Well, if he is not at rest, how are their masses to give him repose? Does the Bible say that they have that efficacy? I must be excused for being so old-fashioned as to appeal to the Bible. That book, since it says nothing about masses, cannot be supposed to say anything of their *tranquillizing* tendency. I always forget that the Romanists have another source of information on religion besides the Bible. Tradition they call it. They mean by it the *talk* of inspired men, when they had no pen in their hands; which being heard, was reported, and so has come down by word of mouth. But I, for my part, am satisfied with what they *wrote*.

We Protestants cannot join the Roman Catholics in their solemn office for Lafayette. We hope there is no *need* for praying for the repose of his soul; and we are certain there is no *use* in it. We prayed for him while he was *living*. We did not wait for him to be dead first. Now that his spirit has returned to God who gave it,

and the Judge has passed sentence upon it, we leave it there. By the way, how do the Romanists know when to stop praying for the repose of a soul? The Charleston Roman Catholics had their mass for him on the 30th of June. But it seems it was of no avail, for the Philadelphia Roman Catholics are called together to sing theirs on the 29th of July. How long is this thing to go on? I am writing on the 31st of July. Is he at rest now? Was the mass of the 29th instant more efficacious than that of the 30th ult? Perhaps the next news from New York will be, that mass is to be performed there for the repose of the same soul some day in August. I hope the church is not *infallible* in regard to Lafayette, as in other matters. I should be sorry to think him all this time *not at rest*.

I remember an old Latin maxim, "*Nil de mortuis, nisi bonum*," say nothing but good respecting the dead—which, it seems to me, the Romanists have disregarded in the case of Lafayette. It is certainly not saying any good of a dead man, to say that he is not at rest.\*

---

#### 47. *Prayers for the Faithful Departed.*

I have taken up again that little book, "*The Christian's Guide to Heaven*,"—published, as the title-page assures us, with the approbation of the most reverend Archbishop of Baltimore. Parts of it I have heretofore reviewed; but I have not exhausted its contents. I find, on page 198 of my edition, the title of this article,

---

\* Our Author, as an American, may be well excused for taking the most favourable view of the character of Lafayette. But, it should be remembered, that a man may be an enthusiastic lover of what is called Liberty, without knowing anything, or caring anything, about that "*Liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free*." (Gal. vi. 1.) The grand point to be enforced is this,—that, whatever be a man's state in the eternal world, no prayers, or masses, or solemn offices (which are but solemn mockeries) can avail, either to increase the blessedness of the saved, or to alleviate the misery of the lost.

“Prayers for the Faithful Departed.” Faithful, said I to myself; and is it for the *faithful* dead that they pray? I was so ignorant as to suppose, that it was for the wicked Roman Catholics, being dead, that they were so good as to pray. I thought there was no need of praying for deceased *Christians*—for the *faithful* departed. I got the notion somewhere, that good people, when they die, go to a place where there is “fulness of joy,” and “pleasures for evermore.” I may have imbibed it from St. Paul, who says that, when such are “absent from the body,” they are “present with the Lord;” or perhaps I caught it from St. John, who speaks of the dead that die in the Lord, as “blessed from henceforth,” and as resting from their labours. It is more likely, however, that I got the idea from our Saviour, who says to the church in Smyrna (Rev. ii. 10), “Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.” It was natural that I should take up the idea in reading this, that prayers for the faithful departed were needless; since He says, if they were faithful *unto* death they should receive a crown of life. We are all liable to mistakes, that is, unless we are *infallible*. It seems, according to the Romanists, who profess to know all about these matters, that the faithful do not get the crown of life by being faithful *unto* death. No, they must, it seems, be faithful a good while after death, before they receive it. That which they get at death is very different from the crown of life. They are a long time absent from the body before they are present with the Lord. They do not go to heaven, or paradise. They go to purgatory. This is the Romanist’s creed. It does not seem to agree altogether with the Saviour’s promise to the Smyrneans. A simple man would suppose, that fidelity unto death was immediately followed by the crown of life. But they that *cannot err* tell us otherwise!

Somehow or other this doctrine of the faithful going to purgatory, and needing to be prayed out of it, seems to have been always out of the mind of the Apostle Paul, when he had his pen in hand, or was dictating his epistles.

He speaks of it as *gain* to die ; but surely, to exchange earth for purgatory is no gain. He tells us of his desire to depart and be with Christ, as if the one immediately followed the other. He overlooked purgatory ; or I think he would not have had a desire to depart. Perhaps he thought he would fare as well as Lazarus, who made no stay in purgatory ; or as the penitent thief, who could not have made a long one, since he was in paradise the same day he died. It has always appeared to me, that, according to the Romish system, this man, of all others, should have gone to purgatory. He never did any penance on earth—never bought an indulgence—he repented only a few minutes before he died ; and yet he goes direct to paradise ! Who then may not ?\*

But do they not give us *chapter and verse* for praying for the dead ? They do. Here it is. “It is a holy and wholesome thought to pray for the dead, that they may be loosened from their sins.” 2 Macb. xii. 46.—This may *look* like Scripture, but does not *sound* like it. It passes for Scripture with Romanists : but it is *Apocrypha*. It is no more Scripture than the Koran is. I know the Romanists contend, that it is good Scripture. But ask the Jews if it be Scripture. “*Unto them* were committed the oracles of God.” Ask them, if the books of Maccabees were committed to them ? They tell you, *no*. They were not even written in Hebrew. The New Testament abounds in quotations from the Old Testament. But none of the writers has quoted Maccabees. Strange, if it had been Scripture. I would ask any one who reads it, if it strikes the ear as Scripture ? Besides, the verse quoted is not good sense. They speak of praying for the dead as a *holy thought*, and of prayer as having an efficacy to *loosen them from their sins*. Any child can see this to be no part of Scripture.

But I hasten to the prayer. “A Prayer for the

---

\*That is to say, if (like the thief upon the cross) he looks, with true repentance and lively faith, unto the Lord Jesus Christ, and Him alone. (Is. xlv, 22.)

suffering souls in purgatory." It is a curious prayer. Here is one petition. "Have mercy on those who suffer in purgatory. Look with compassion on the greatness of their torments; they are more keenly devoured by their ardent desire of being united to thee, than by the purging flames wherein they are plunged." Observe, here are *spirits* in *flames*; and they are *purging* flames. Fire may refine and purify certain metals: but how it should act in that way on *souls*, is beyond my comprehension. The suffering occasioned by fire is very horrible; but it seems that it is nothing, compared with what they suffer from the love of God, or from the "ardent desire of being united to Him." I wonder, if they have such desire after God, that they are kept in suffering; I wonder He does not take them up to Himself. Why should they suffer so, since Christ has suffered for them, and they are the faithful, who believe on Him? Did not Christ suffer enough? But the prayer proceeds: "With them I adore thy avenging justice." So it seems the faithful are the objects of God's avenging justice! I always thought that justice exacted its full demand of Christ. I don't know what the *Apocrypha* says about it; but holy Scripture informs me (Rom. iii. 26), that God can now be "*just*, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus;" and that "if we confess our sins, He is faithful and *just* to forgive them." (1 John i. 9.) Are not the faithful pardoned? and how is pardon consistent with vengeance?

The prayer goes on thus: "Remember, O Lord, thou art their Father, and they are thy children. Forget the faults which, through the frailty of human nature, they have committed against thee." Then a little further on: "Remember, O Lord, that they are thy living members, thy faithful followers, thy spouses." Here you see these sufferers are God's children; and they are suffering for mere *faults*, which they fell into through *frailty*. This seems hard. But they are not only God's children; they are Christ's members, his faithful followers, his spouses; and He died for them—and yet there they are

*burning*—pardoned, yet suffering punishment—interested in the satisfaction of Christ, yet making satisfaction for themselves—paying over again the penalty which the Saviour discharged. And this is the Romish gospel! Is it not “another gospel”? And yet “not another.” It is *no* gospel. *It is a contradiction of the good news.*

I quote one more petition: “Deliver them, O most merciful God, from that place of darkness and torture, and call them to a place of refreshment, light and peace.” The reader will remember that this prayer is for the *faithful*. It is they who, having been “faithful unto death,” go to a place of darkness and torture! I know not what worse can befall *unbelievers*.\* Truly, here is no great encouragement to believing. What a doctrine is this to breathe in the ear of a disciple! Fear not, be of good cheer, thou art but going to a place of “darkness and torture.” Can it be Jesus who says this to his faithful followers? Can this be *christian* doctrine? It certainly is not calculated to make dying easy. With such a prospect before them, I do not wonder that Roman Catholics find it hard to die. Verily, death has a sting, and the grave a victory, if the Romish doctrine of purgatory be true.

---

#### 48. *An Improvement.*

I always hail improvements, even though the improvement be slight. We must not despise the day of small things. Rome was not built in a day, nor will she be overthrown in a day. A system that it took centuries to introduce, cannot be expected to pass away all at once. Even if the improvement be only in phrase, I rejoice in it, because words not only signify

---

\* One difference, and only one, the Romanists acknowledge between the fire of Purgatory and that of Hell: namely in *duration*. The fire of Purgatory is as dreadful as that of Hell: but it is only *temporary*; while that of Hell is *eternal*.

ideas, but sometimes generate them ; so that, from using right words, men not unfrequently pass to holding correct ideas on the subjects to which they refer.

The improvement to which I refer is merely verbal. The case is this. It is the habit among Romanists, some few months after a considerable character dies, to have a service for him. This has heretofore been announced thus : "High mass will be sung or said for the repose of the soul of such a one, at such a time ;"—Not, the reader will understand, because the soul is at rest, but that it may be. The service is not eucharistic, but supplicatory. This, I observed, was done in the case of a recent bishop, and also in that of Lafayette, who, some months after he had died, was discovered not to be at rest. Now, a short time ago, the Archbishop of Baltimore died ; and, weeks having passed away, the time came to take notice of his soul. It was done. But I was struck with the alteration in the wording of the notice. It ran thus : "A funeral service will be performed in the cathedral for the late Most Rev. Archbishop Whitefield." This is certainly better than the old way of announcing it. To be sure, it sounds odd to talk of a funeral service for one who was regularly buried months before. Protestants cannot understand it. But, waiving this, why the change of phrase ? The best explanation I can give is this : The Romanists see, that the sense of the community, though sufficiently in their favour, will not tolerate a thing of this kind without a degree of restlessness, not a little annoying to them, and perhaps likely to be injurious. For man, who is naturally a logician, and can reason without having studied the rules of logic, argues thus : Either the soul for which the mass is said is at rest, or it is not. If it is, it is preposterous to pray for its repose. It is asking for what has been done already. When a thing is done, to pray for it is superfluous. Then is the time to give thanks. If the soul is not at rest, then common sense, which is no fool, asks why they did not begin to pray for its repose sooner ?

It was not kind. And common sense inquires how they know the soul did not go at once to rest; or, if not, how they know it is not at rest months after. Common sense, not finding any thing about it in the Bible, asks how the Romanists get the information? So, through fear of the questions of common sense, they change the wording of the notice. It is wise. Well may the Romish church stand in dread of common sense. It is a formidable foe to error and imposition. I confidently look forward to the overthrow of Romanism; and I expect that a great deal of the work of its destruction will be done by common sense.\* I have not the dread, which some have, that this religion will overrun our country, and rise to dominion here. There is too much common sense abroad in the land to allow of it. The people of the United States will *think*; and they have a notion that they have a right to think for themselves, without sending to Rome to know if they may. They will ask questions on religion; and they will insist on a satisfactory answer. The inhabitants of the old world may, if they please, believe on the *ipse dixit* of the Pope; but *we*, before we yield our assent, require a "Thus saith the Lord," or a demonstration. You can never get a majority here to believe in contradiction of the five senses. They will stick to it that a thing is what they see and feel and taste it to be—that bread is bread.

---

\* That is to say, if it be such common sense as takes the Bible in hand, and brings every question connected with religion to that only infallible touchstone. Let it be well considered, and continually remembered, that without constant reference to the Word of God, we are liable—with all our powers of reasoning and natural shrewdness—to make the greatest mistakes in Religion. "Vain man would be wise, though man be born like a wild ass's colt." (Job. xi. 12). "Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools." (Rom. i. 22). In short, he who presumes to judge upon the all-important question of Religion, without submitting his soul to the teaching of the Bible, has really taken leave of common sense. (Jer. viii. 9. 1 Cor. iii. 18—20. Is. viii. 20.) A. S. T.

49. *The Duke of Brunswick's Fiftieth Reason.*

A certain Duke of Brunswick, having many years ago abjured Lutheranism, and become a Roman Catholic, thought it necessary to apologize to the world for his change of religion. It needed an apology. So he wrote down *fifty reasons* to justify the course he had pursued, and had them printed in a book, entitled, "Fifty Reasons why the Roman Catholic religion ought to be preferred to all others." This book Romanists have permission to read. For they may read almost any book but the Bible. There is no objection to their reading books which contain *the thoughts of men*; but the book which contains *the thoughts of God* is interdicted! *Men* know how to express themselves, and can write intelligibly. But.....!!

Fifty reasons! The duke must have been conscious, I suppose, that his reasons were weak, or he would have been satisfied with less than fifty. Why does a man want fifty reasons for a thing, when *one* good reason is enough? I have but one general reason for not being a Roman Catholic, and that is enough. It is *that the Roman Catholic religion is not the religion of the Bible*. It is not the religion of Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, Paul, James, Jude, and *Peter*; as any one may see, who will compare the Holy Scriptures with the Council of Trent. But the Duke, feeling that he had not one *good* reason for turning Romanist gives fifty *poor* ones; thinking to make up for the weakness of his reasons by their number; and calculating that fifty poor reasons would certainly be equivalent to one good one.

Fifty reasons! I shall not now inquire what the *forty-nine* were. But what do you think the Duke's *fiftieth* reason was—his closing, crowning reason—that with which he capped the climax?

I will give it to you in his own words, which I quote from an edition published by one of the best Roman Catholics in the land; so there can be no mistake about

it. After going on about something else, he says, "Besides that, the Catholics to whom I spoke concerning my salvation, assured me that, if I were to be damned for embracing the Catholic faith, they were ready to answer for me *at the Day of Judgment*, and to take my damnation upon themselves; an assurance I could never extort from the ministers of any sect in case I should live and die in their religion. From whence I inferred, the Roman Catholic faith was built on a better foundation than any of those sects that have divided from it." Prodigious!—and there he stops. I think it was time.

I do not know whether to make any comment on this reason or not. Sometimes comment is needless, and even injurious. I wonder Romanists are not ashamed of this reason. Indeed, I suspect, that the intelligent ones among them do blush, and wish the duke had stopped at forty-nine.

But let us look at it a minute. It seems the duke was won over by the generosity of the Roman Catholics. They agreed, that—if he were to be damned for embracing their faith, (they admit the possibility that he might be; whereas the Protestant ministers whom he consulted were too well assured of the truth of their religion to allow of the supposition,) they would take his place, and be damned for him. Now I wonder the duke had not reflected—that those very Romanists who made him this generous offer, if their faith was false, would have to be damned for themselves! That which should leave him without a title to heaven, would equally leave them without one. I wonder the duke so readily believed, that the substitution would be accepted. What if they were willing to suffer perdition in his place? The *Judge* might object to the arrangement. What ignorance and stupidity to suppose, that one may suffer in hell for another, just as one serves in the army for another! What an idea such persons must have of the nature of future punishment, to suppose that it is transferable! How is one man to suffer *remorse* for another? Again, what an admirable exemplification of the spirit of

Christianity, that one should consent, on any condition, to lie in hell, for ever sinning and blaspheming God! I am sincerely glad that no Protestant minister could be found to give his consent to an eternity of enmity against God. But the Romanists whom the duke consulted, loved the Lord so, that they were willing to sin against him for ever and ever, with ever-increasing malignity, for the sake of saving their noble proselyte! "FROM WHENCE I INFERRED," says the duke (but you have no *capitals* large enough for this conclusion), "the Roman Catholic faith was built on a better foundation than any of those sects that have divided from it." Admirable reasoning!

I think that those who wish to live and die Roman Catholics, had better keep their eyes shut. If they open them almost any where, they will be in danger.

---

#### 50 *The Duke's Seventh Reason.*

The Duke's *fiftieth* reason has been the subject of an article. Each of his reasons might be made the subject of one: but that would be giving them too much consequence. I have selected the *seventh* for some remarks, because I have several times, in conversation with Roman Catholics, heard it alleged, and some considerable stress laid on it. The drift of it is this: Protestants acknowledge that some Roman Catholics may be saved, but Roman Catholics contend, that no Protestants can be saved. Therefore it is better and safer to be a Roman Catholic, than a Protestant! But, perhaps, I had better let his Serene Highness speak for himself. He says, "But what still confirmed me in my resolution of embracing the Roman Catholic faith was this, that the heretics themselves confess Roman Catholics may be saved, whereas, these maintain there is no salvation for such as are out of the Roman Catholic church." Let us examine this reasoning. Roman Catholics say, that there is no salvation out of their church, and that therefore, by

all means, we should belong to it. But does their saying make it so? Is this very *charitable* doctrine of the Roman Catholics of course *true*? Is it so very clear, that none are saved but the *greatest bigots*—none saved but those who affirm, and are ready to swear that none others but themselves can be saved? Have Roman Catholics never affirmed any thing but what was strictly true; so that, from their uniform veracity and accuracy, we may infer that they must be correct in this statement? Let history answer that question. This is more than we claim even for Protestants. No salvation except for Roman Catholics! Ah! and where is the chapter and verse for that? I don't think that even the Apocrypha can supply them. If subsequent Popes have taught the doctrine, he who is reckoned by Roman Catholics to have been the first Pope, did not. It is rather unkind, perhaps, to quote Peter against his alleged successors, but a regard to truth compels me to do it. It is true, Peter once thought, that a person must be an Israelite to be saved, just as our Roman Catholics hold that a person must be a Roman Catholic in order to be saved; but the case of *Cornelius* cured him of that prejudice. That led him to say, as recorded, Acts x. 34, 35, "Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons: but in every nation he that feareth Him, and worketh righteousness, is accepted with Him." This sounds a little different from the Duke's premises. It is a little unlike the language of later Popes. They have not taken their *cue* from Peter.

Now, if what the Roman Catholics say about there being no salvation out of their church, is not true—if there is no scripture for it, but much against it—if even Peter controverts it, it certainly does not constitute a very good reason for being a Roman Catholic. Suppose that Protestants should give out to the world, that none but themselves can be saved, would that make Protestantism any better, or safer, or worthier of adoption? Would our religion be more entitled to reception, if we should publish that Fenelon was lost for ever, and that

Pascal was excluded from heaven, and Massillon too, just because they were not Protestants, but in communion with the Church of Rome? I think not. Nor can I think that the Roman Catholic Religion is entitled to increased respect and veneration, because Roman Catholics assert, as an undoubted verity, that such men as Locke, Newton, Leighton, Howard, and many others, are beyond all question in hell, not even admitted to purgatory, because, forsooth, they were not Roman Catholics.

But the Duke's inference is from a double premise, Not only do Roman Catholics say no Protestant can be saved; but Protestants allow that Roman Catholics may. If Protestants were to say that, Roman Catholics could not be saved, then they would be *even* with each other, and there could be no argument in the case. But since Protestants allow that others besides themselves may be saved, while Roman Catholics deny it, therefore the Roman Catholic religion is the safer! See what credit the Roman Catholics give our declarations when they seem to work in their favor. They build a whole argument on one. Why do they not give us equal credence, when we declare that the probability of salvation among Protestants is much greater than among Roman Catholics?

But what is it after all that Protestants allow? They allow that *some* Roman Catholics *may* be saved. They allow, that the fact of a person's being externally related to the Roman Church does not of itself shut him out from salvation;—that, if he believes with his heart in the Lord Jesus, and truly repents of his sins, he will be saved, *though* a Roman Catholic: and that the fact of his being a Roman Catholic, though much against him, does not preclude the possibility of his being a genuine penitent and true believer. This is the length and breadth of our admission. It admits, as every one must see, not that there is salvation *by* the Roman Catholic religion, but *in spite* of it, to some who professedly adhere to that religion. If a Roman Catholic hold understandingly to the merit of good works, the insufficiency of Christ's sacrifice, the worship of creatures,

or similar unscriptural doctrines, we do not see how he can be saved ; but we believe many, who are called Roman Catholics, reject these doctrines in fact, though not perhaps in word, and rely on Christ's atonement alone for salvation. Now, if Roman Catholics are so absurd, or so bigoted as not to admit in our favour as much as we admit in theirs, we can't help it, and we don't care for it. It is just as they please. We shall not take back our admission for the sake of making proselytes to Protestantism : and if they can draw off any from us by their exclusive notions, they are welcome to them.

But I must call the reader's attention to the extent of the Duke's inference. He infers the perfect safety of the Roman Catholic religion, because Protestants admit that some Roman Catholics may be saved ! But is that a safe spot, of which this only can be said, that some of the persons occupying it may possibly escape ? And is it madness to occupy any other spot ? The Duke exclaims, " What a madness then were it, for any man not to go over to the Roman Catholics, who may be saved in the judgment of their adversaries : but to sort himself with these, who, according to Roman Catholics, are out of the way ? " What a madness indeed, not to join a people who may not all be lost ! Oh what a madness to continue to be Protestants, when Roman Catholics say that they are out of the way ! What if they do say so ? What if every Jesuit missionary has ever so constantly affirmed it ? I suppose a Jesuit can say what is not so, as well as any body else. I suppose it is not naturally impossible for one being a Jesuit, I will not say to *lie*, but to *err*. He goes on like a very Aristotle. " Who would not advise a man to take the safest way, when he is threatened with any evident danger ? " Certainly, noble Duke, the safest way ; but not of course the way which some say is safest. There are a great many *safest ways*, if all which are said to be safest, are so. But his highness proceeds : " And does not that way which two opposite parties approve of, promise greater security than another which one party only

recommends, and which the other condemns?" But that is not so. The two parties do not approve of it. So far from it, that the Protestant declares the Roman Catholic way to be an exceedingly dangerous way; while his own way, though pronounced by the Roman Catholic to be fatal, can claim the most respectable testimony, that it is the true and safe way. Then comes an illustration, which, like a great many other illustrations, is well constructed, but happens to be totally inapplicable to the case in hand: "Who, in fine, can doubt, but that a medicine prescribed by two physicians may be taken with more security than another, which one of the two judges may be his death?" How the Duke rolls on his argument! Just now the Protestant only admitted the *possibility* of the Roman Catholic's salvation. Then he is represented as *approving* the Roman Catholic way—and immediately after as *prescribing* it! It is easy proving any thing, if one may make facts to suit his purpose. It is not true, that Protestants *prescribe* the Roman Catholic religion to those who ask them what they shall do to be saved.

People must become Roman Catholics if they please; but I would advise them to look out for better reasons for the change than the Duke of Brunswick's fifty; and especially than this, his seventh. It is a poor reason for becoming a Roman Catholic, that they say they are the people, and haughtily bid others stand by. I cannot think it so great a recommendation of a religion, that it *denounces*, and, so far as it can, *damns* all who cannot see their way clear to embrace it.

---

#### 51. *The Duke's Eleventh Reason.*

*Fifty* reasons why the Roman Catholic religion ought to be preferred to all others! Only think. And some of them, that I don't find any answer to in any Protestant writer! Such a one is the *eleventh* of the formidable series. In the three preceding reasons or considerations,

as he calls them, the duke had been giving us the result of his inquiries. It seems he was quite an investigator. He *searched* almost every book but the Scriptures. He looked for what he wanted every where, but where the thing was. When a man is enquiring after the truth, and consults the philosophers, the fathers, the martyrs, and all the saints, I cannot see where is the harm of just looking into the Prophets, the Evangelists, and the Apostles too. I don't know why they should be treated with such neglect ; I think they are quite as respectable writers as any of the fathers. But be this as it may, the duke, in his *eighth* consideration, tells us about his consulting the writings of the ancient fathers, to find what they would advise him to do, whether to embrace the Roman Catholic faith or no. And he says, they all told him to be a Roman Catholic by all means. Then, says he, in his *ninth* consideration, "I appealed to the saints of God, and asked them what was the faith they lived in, and by which they arrived at eternal bliss." And they said—(not that they had "washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb," in accordance with the account given of some other saints in Rev. vii.)—but "they all made answer, It was the Roman faith." By the way, the Roman Catholics have an advantage over us Protestants. They know who are saints, and seem to have a way of consulting them after they are dead. *We* are not equal to those things. Why, the duke even tells us the names of those who made answer. "Thus," says he, "I was answered by St. Martin, St. Nicholas, St. Athanasius, and many more among the bishops ; among the religious, by St. Dominick (!?), St. Francis, &c. Among the widows, by St. Monica, St. Bridget, St. Elizabeth, &c. Among the virgins, by St. Agatha, St. Lucy, St. Agnes, St. Catharine, &c." I think, if a Protestant had had the privilege of cross-examining the above when the duke consulted them, the result might have been somewhat different. But no Protestant had notice of his intention to carry his inquiries into that quarter. The duke was determined

to make thorough work of it. Therefore, in his *tenth* consideration he tells us, "Then I turned to the holy martyrs, and inquired what faith it was, for the truth of which they spilt their blood." They answered it was the Roman Catholic. "This," he says, "I was assured of by thirty-three bishops of Rome, who were crowned with martyrdom; by the saints Cyprian, Sebastian, Laurence; by St. Agatha, St. Cicily, St. Dorothy, St. Barbara, and an *infinite* number of other saints." They all told the same story. "Then," says the duke, "I wound up my argument." But he concluded on the whole, before winding it up, to let it *run down* a little lower. And this brings us to his *eleventh* reason. The reader will please prepare himself now for a *prostrating* argument. "My next step was in thought to hell, where I found in condemnation to everlasting torments, Simon Magus, Novatus, Vigilantius, Pelagius, Nestorius, Macedonius, Marcion, &c." May I never be under the necessity of descending so low for an argument! But the duke does not say that he *actually* went thither, but he went *in thought*. There, having gone *in thought*, he found so and so. Here is another advantage the Romanists have over us. They know who are in hell. We do not. Perhaps some are not there who we may fear are. We do not hold ourselves qualified to judge in these matters. Well, he found them there. He was quite sure not one of them had repented and been saved. And he asked them how they came there, and they very civilly answered, that "it was for their breaking off from the Roman Catholic church." Now this is the argument that I have not seen answered by any Protestant writer, as far as I can recollect. I don't read of any Protestant who went even in thought to hell, to consult the lost on the points in controversy between us and the Romanists. So that the Romanists have the whole of this argument to themselves. The duke says they told him they were there for not being Roman Catholics, and we have no counter-testimony. Protestantism, however, having so many other "witnesses to the truth" of her system, can

easily do without the testimony of "the spirits in prison." Let that be for the Roman Catholics. But by the way, I wonder that the duke relied so unhesitatingly on the testimony of those persons. How does he know that they told the truth? Are not all such called in Scripture "the children of the devil," and does not every body know his character for veracity? It is certainly an extraordinary answer for one of them, Simon Magus, to give, considering the time when he lived. How could he say with truth that he was there, for breaking off from the Roman Catholic church, when, at the date of his apostacy, the gospel had never been preached at Rome? There was no Roman church to break off from then.

I was expecting that the duke would push his inquiries yet one step farther; and, seeing he was on the spot, would interrogate Satan in regard to the true religion. But he does not seem to have consulted "the father of lying," but only the children. The truth is, the devil does not wait to be consulted on that subject, but makes his suggestions to "them that dwell on the earth," without being called upon so to do.

I hope the Reformed religion will be able to stand the shock of this argument, though it has never been answered before.

## 52. *Beauties of the Leopold Reports.*

I have been not a little interested with the extracts recently published from the Reports of the Leopold Society in Austria; and it has struck me that I might do some service, especially to those who have not the time or the patience to read long articles, by calling the attention of the public to the *choice* parts of these reports; for even where all is good, you know, there are generally portions here and there of *superior excellence*. Will you allow, me then, to point out some of the *beauties* of the reports? What has struck me with peculiar force, will probably affect others as forcibly.

Now I have admired the way in which the report speaks of *conversions*. It seems that these Roman Catholics can *foresee* conversions with as much certainty as we, poor blind Protestants, can *look back* on them! F. Baraga writes, under date of March 10, 1832: "I long for the arrival of spring, when I shall have numerous conversions"!! Now, I am aware that the *face of nature* is renewed when spring appears; but I did not know this was as true of the *souls of men*. It is news to me, that conversions can be foreseen with such perfect accuracy. It is hard to foresee what men will do. But here is a foreseeing of what God will do, unless they deny that conversion is his work! But what makes our Roman Catholic brother speak so confidently of the conversions that were to take place? How did he know it? Why, forsooth, some had promised him that they would be converted in the spring. "There are many pagan Indians," he says, "who promised me last summer and fall, that they would in the spring embrace the Christian religion!" This beats all. Why, if they were convinced of the truth of the Christian Religion, did they not embrace it at once? Why put it off till after the first of March? But not only had some promised him that they would be converted, but he says, "From two other counties I have received assurances, that many of the Indians there would be converted to the Christian religion, if I would come and preach the gospel to them!" You see they had told others, who told Baraga, that they would. It came very *straight*. He speaks particularly of a *Christian* Indian who had brought him the intelligence. Now observe, they had never heard a word of the Gospel—neither knew what it was, nor how it is confirmed! Yet they promised to embrace it—promised to believe, and to be converted—to have their hearts changed—to be born again! I know that God promises, "A new heart will I give you;" but I never knew before, that any man, and especially one who had never heard the Gospel, could look forward and say, "At such a time I will have a new heart."

Baraga says, "I cannot describe the joy such assurances give me." We Protestants are not so easily made happy by the promises of the unconverted.

Again, I have been struck with the manner in which Baraga speaks of the mother of Jesus, under date of July 1, 1832: "When I decided to be a missionary," he says, "I promised *our heavenly mother*, that I would consecrate to her the first church I should consecrate among the Indians; for I am convinced she will pray her Son continually for the progress of our missions." *Our heavenly Mother!* Our heavenly *Father* is a phrase dear to every Christian heart; but I did not know we had a heavenly mother. Will the reader pause a moment, and inquire the meaning of the word *idolatry*? Baraga *promised* her! Where had they the interview when that promise was made? He must have been praying to her. And why was the promise made? Because "I am convinced she will pray her Son." What! *prayer* in heaven! John, in Patmos, heard *praise* in heaven, but not prayer. I know there is one advocate in heaven, Jesus Christ the righteous, who ever liveth to make intercession. That one is enough. But here we are told of another advocate on high—a mediatrix. And she prays to her Son—mediates between him and sinners. What! Do we need a mediator between us and Christ? I always knew we needed a mediator between God and us; but I supposed we must go directly and immediately to Christ, since He is himself the Mediator.\* Baragá says presently after, "Thanks be

---

\* *A mediator with the Mediator* seems to us Protestants a very strange expression: but it is one which belongs to, and is characteristic of, Romish Theology; as will appear from the following extract from "The Glories of Mary, Mother of God, translated from the Italian of Saint Alphonsus Liguori, and carefully revised by a Catholic Priest. Fourth Edition. Dublin: Printed by John Coyne, 24, Cooke Street, 1841."

"It is because the eternal Father wishes even to exhaust his mercies in our favour, that after having giving us Jesus for Mediator with him, he has given us Mary for advocate

to Mary, gracious mother, who ever prays for the conversion of the heathen." Now, if all this is not idolatry, I wish somebody could tell me what idolatry is. I would as soon undertake to defend the worship of the *golden calf* as this.

Finally, what power these Romish priests have! Protestant ministers are only "mighty through God." But the priests can succeed without that help. Father Senderl writes: "Young people of sixteen years, and not unfrequently older persons, have never confessed nor communed (taken the *half sacrament*, I suppose he means). I prepare them for both, and for confirmation." I prepare them! And another writes concerning Baraga, that he *achieves wonders of salvation* among the Ottawas.

This is a specimen of the religion which Prince Metternich & Co., our Austrian brethren, those dear lovers of liberty, are benevolently contributing to give us here in America. They are afraid that our free institutions will not be permanent, unless they help us to prop them up with the Roman Catholic religion! Timeo Metternich et dona ferentem. [I fear Metternich, even sending gifts.]

next to Jesus. "Undoubtedly, says St. Bernard, "Jesus Christ is the only Mediator between God and man, but because men fear that Divine Person who is destined one day to judge them, it has been necessary to give them *a mediator with the Mediator*, and none was so fit for this office as Mary his Mother." It would be injuring this most gracious Lady, to fear to come to her throne." (p. 146.)

I ask, Would it not be much more injuring our gracious Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, who shed His precious blood for our redemption, to fear to come to Him? See Heb. iv. 14—16; x. 19—22.

St. Bernard is a great authority with the Romanists. He is considered as the last of the Fathers; and he is very often quoted. Certainly a Mediator to whom we need a mediator is no Mediator at all. He could not be in a position to mediate a peace between God and man—the parties who are at enmity, if we needed another to make our peace with him.

### 53. *Partiality of the Church of Rome.*

There is nothing of which I am more perfectly certain than that the religion of the church of Rome is not the religion of Jesus Christ. I do not care to say what it is—but it is not Christianity. How can they be the same, when they differ so widely? Midnight and noon are not more unlike. I will specify one point of difference. Romanism is *partial*. She is a respecter of persons. Christianity is the very opposite of this. And not only is the church of Rome partial, but her partialities are all in favour of the rich. Now Christianity, if it leans in any direction, inclines towards the poor. It was one sign that the Messiah was come in the person of Jesus of Nazareth, that “the poor had the Gospel preached to them.” They were not overlooked: far from it. “Hearken,” says one (Jas. ii. 5); “hath not God chosen the poor of this world, rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he has promised to them that love him?” The poor had never such a friend as Christ. He was himself poor. He had experience of the privations, cares and sorrows of that condition. So poor was He, that He had not where to lay his head. No lodging-place at night had He, in all that world which his word created and his hand sustained. The poor are peculiarly his brethren.

And think you, then, that He has opened a wider door of entrance into heaven to the rich than to the poor? Think you that He has connected with the condition of the rich man an advantage, whereby he may sooner or more easily obtain admittance into the place of his glorious presence? I do not believe it. But this is what the church of Rome teaches. She preaches better tidings to the rich than to the poor: Christ did not. But I must make good this charge against the church of Rome. I do it thus: According to her creed, all souls (except, perhaps, now and then one) of every condition, go, on their leaving the body, to purgatory. There they are. Now to get them out: how does she say that is to be done? Why, they must either suffer out their time (that is, all the time which remains, after

subtracting all the indulgences that were purchased and paid for), or their release must be effected by the efficacy of prayers and masses said for them by the faithful on earth. You remember that mass was performed lately by the Roman Catholic congress, assembled in Baltimore, for the repose of the souls of two deceased bishops. There is no other way. Christ's sacrifice does not give rest to the soul, according to the Romanists, unless the sacrifice of the mass be added to it! Well, how are these masses, so necessary to the repose and release of the soul, to be had? Why how do you suppose but by *paying for them*? Give the priests money, and they will say them. At any rate, they promise that they will. Now, do you not see the advantage which money gives a man in the church of Rome, and the hardships of being a poor Roman Catholic? I wonder any poor man should think the Romish religion the religion of Christ. Verily, Popery is no religion for poverty. What did our Saviour mean, when he said, Mark x. 23: "How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!" According to the Roman Catholic doctrine, they are the very men that enter most easily; they having wherewith to purchase indulgences and masses. It is the poor, according to this scheme, that with difficulty enter in. *They* have to serve their time out in purgatory: whereas *the rich* can buy their time off.

But is the thing managed in this way? Are not masses said for all that die in the Roman Catholic faith? Yes, there is a day in the year called All-souls day (it comes on the 2nd of November: alas for the poor Roman Catholic who dies on the 3rd, for he has to wait a whole year for a mass), when all of them are prayed for. The poor share in the benefit of the masses said on that day; but what does it amount to, when you consider the millions of Roman Catholics that die every year, and the many millions not yet out of the fire, among whom the benefit is to be divided? It is not like having a mass said for one man's soul in particular. That is the privilege of the rich.

Now I do not believe that it is the religion of the blessed Jesus that makes this distinction in favour of the rich. I believe that Christ brought as good news from heaven to the poor as to the rich. I believe that every blessing which He has to dispose of may be bought *without money and without price*. (See Isa. lv. 1.) I believe that "whosoever will," may "take of the water of life freely." (Rev. xxii. 17.) This is my creed.

There was poor Lazarus. I reckon he went to heaven as soon after he died, as he would have done if he had had millions of money to leave to the church; and I reckon the angels were as tender and careful of his soul, as if he had been clothed in purple, and fared sumptuously every day. And he was a poor man to whom the dying Saviour said, "To-day shalt thou be with me in Paradise." If there was ever a man who, according to the Romish doctrine, should have gone to purgatory, and remained a great while there, it was that thief. But you see he did not go thither. Christ took him with Him immediately to paradise. He went thither without penance, without *extreme unction*, without *confession to a priest*, without a single mass being said for him, in utter outrage of all the rules of the church! I don't think that Joseph of Arimathea, rich as he was, could have got to heaven sooner than that penitent thief. But Christ always considered the poor; and that is not Christianity which does not consider them.

As I said in former pieces, that I had no faith in salvation by fire, or in salvation by oil, I say now, that I have no faith in salvation by *money*.

I will close with a syllogism. Christianity makes it as easy for a poor man to get to heaven, as for one that is rich. This is my *major* proposition. Who dare dispute it? But the church of Rome makes it not so easy for a poor man to get to heaven as one that is rich. This is my *minor* proposition; and this I have shown. Who dare deny it? Now my *conclusion* is therefore; the religion of the church of Rome is not Christianity.

54. *Beauties of the Leopold Reports.—Puerility of the Roman Catholic Religion.*

What a *puerile* religion the Roman Catholic religion is! How *childish*! How petty its cares! About what trifles it concerns itself! The Christian is truly "the highest style of man:" but the consistent Roman Catholic is not much above the *lowest*. Baraga writes as follows: "It would be of *essential* service to our missions, if there could be sent us cups, boxes for the holy wafer, rosaries, crucifixes—of the last two, as many as possible, for such articles cannot be bought here. How it is with church furniture and linen, you may easily think. Those given to me by pious persons are of great use to me, and I cannot be *thankful enough* for them." Cannot be thankful enough for boxes, rosaries, &c.!! His capacity for gratitude must be small indeed. We Protestants often feel that we cannot be *thankful enough*; but it is not for such *trumpery* as cups and boxes. When we feel and lament over the inadequacy of our gratitude, it is in view of the many and great mercies of God to us. I suppose our Protestant missionaries at Ceylon, and elsewhere, would not be so very grateful if we should send them a consignment of cups, boxes, &c. No: such things could not be of *essential service* to their missions. We do not understand converting people as the Roman Catholics do. They can *regenerate* and *pardon*, and do all the rest, in a trice. We have to bring before the *mind* of the sinner the great saving truth of *Christ crucified*; but they have only to put the little *crucifix* into his *hand*. I went, a short time ago, to visit a man under sentence of death, to talk to him about Christ and His death. I found him gazing intently on a little metallic image of Christ crucified, which a priest had left him. He seemed indifferent to all I said. The priest had *prepared* him!

In a note to Baraga's letter, we are told of a great number of Roman Catholic *donations* that are already on

their way to America; among them three thousand *rosaries*! What a number of *beads*! How their missions must prosper after this! A little afterwards, by way of inducing others to contribute beads, boxes, &c. it is said, "The good Christian rejoices to promote the external honour of the house of God, so that the inner man, by the splendor of the external divine worship, may be lifted to heaven." What a *sage* sentiment! How *Scriptural*! How *philosophical* too! This is truly a new way of being lifted to heaven.

But I must not overlook a letter of Bishop Fenwick, dated Mackinac, July 1, 1831. He writes: "On the second day after my arrival, Mr. M. and I preached at different times after mass. When the people had heard some sermons, confessions began; and from that time till the day of our departure, we sat on the *confession stool* from early morning till 1 o'clock, and in the afternoon, from 3 or 4 o'clock, till 10, 11, and twice till 12 at night. There were confessions of twenty, thirty, and forty years." What a prodigious memory they must have had, who called to mind and confessed the sins of forty years! All that time they were waiting for a priest to come to them. There was the God who delighteth in mercy, to whom they might have confessed, as the publican dared to do; and there was "Jesus, the mediator of the new covenant," whom they might at any time have engaged to intercede for them. But that would not have been to act the part of good Roman Catholics. The good Roman Catholic does not go to the *mercy-seat of God* to confess his sins and obtain forgiveness, (that were an "iniquity to be punished by the judges"); but he waits for the priest to come with his *confession-stool*. The *confession-stool* substituted in the place of the *mercy-seat*! This is one of the *doings* of that religion which Austria wants to give us. God says to sinners, "Come unto Me;" and He promises that He will "abundantly pardon them from his throne of grace." (Is. lv. 7, and xxx. 18.) "Nay," says the priest, "wait till I come with my stool." Roman Catholics

may, if they please, go for pardon and mercy to the *stool of confession*:—but, my Protestant brethren, “Let us come boldly unto the *throne of grace*, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.” (Heb. iv. 16.)

---

### 55. *Supererogation.*

This long word was coined by the Roman Catholics for their own special use, as was also that longer and harder word *transubstantiation*. Nobody else finds any occasion for it. It expresses what the rest of mankind think has no real existence. If the reader is acquainted with the *Latin* (that language which the church of Rome extols so high above the Hebrew and Greek, the languages of God’s own choice—and in which she says we ought all to say our prayers, whether we understand it or not), he will see that *supererogation* is compounded of two words, and signifies literally, *above what is required*. It designates that *overwork* in the service of God, which certain good Romanists in all ages are supposed to have done. After doing all the good which God requires of them, then what they do *over and above* that, they call *supererogation*. It expresses how much more they love God than they are required to love him. He claims, you know, to be loved with all the heart, and soul, and strength, and mind. This is the first and great command. And observe, it is with *all* of each. Now, when the Roman Catholic has fully satisfied this claim, he enters upon the work of *supererogation*; and all that he does in the way of loving God, after loving him with *all the four*—heart, strength, soul and mind—to the utmost of his power, is set down to this account, be it more or less. Might I just ask here, for information, if a man is required to love God with *all his strength*, that is, with his *whole ability*, how can he do more? It seems that whatever he *can* do, is required to be done. How Roman Catholics contrive to do more than they can, I, for my part, do

not know. It is a mystery to Protestants. We are in the dark on this subject.

Let me tell you something more about this supererogation. It expresses how much more Roman Catholics are than *perfect*. Perfect, you know, we are all required to be—"perfect, even as our Father who is in heaven is perfect." (Matt. v. 48.) And in another place, even by *Peter*, it is said, "As He which has called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation." Now, when one is holy as He who hath called him is holy, and holy in *all* manner of conversation, in so far as he is more holy than this, (since all this is what is *required*) the surplus is set down to the account of supererogation! In other words, supererogation expresses the superfluous glory which men give to God, after glorifying him in their bodies and spirits, which are his, and doing *all*, whatsoever they do, even to the matter of eating and drinking, to his glory! See 1 Cor. vi. 20, and x. 31. This is supererogation. I hope the reader understands it.

Now, those who do these works of supererogation have, of course, more merit than they have any occasion for on their own account; and, as this excess of merit ought by no means to be lost, the church of Rome has, with great economy, treasured it up for the benefit of those who are so unfortunate as to do *less* than what is required; to whom it is, at the discretion of the church and for value received, served out in the way of *indulgences*. This is the article that Tetzels was dealing in so largely and lucratively, when Martin Luther started up in opposition to the traffic. Protestants have never dealt in the article of indulgences.

By the way, the wise virgins of whom we read in Matthew xxv. 1—13, seem not to have been acquainted with this doctrine of supererogation; for, when the foolish virgins, in the lack of oil, applied to them for a seasonable supply, they answered, "Not so: lest there be not enough for us and you." (v. 9.) They had only enough for themselves.

But, say the Roman Catholics, are there not *counsels* in the Bible, as well as *precepts*—certain things which are *recommended*, though not *required*? If so, and a person, besides obeying the precepts, complies with the counsels, doing not only what is required, but also what is recommended, is not here a foundation for works of supererogation? This is plausible, but that is all. My motto being *brevity*, I shall not attempt an extended answer to it, but take these few things :

1. If there *are* counsels recommending things which no precepts require, yet obedience to these counsels cannot constitute works of supererogation, and accumulate merit, unless all the *precepts* are perfectly obeyed. A man must do all that is required, before he can do more than what is required. 'Now, has any mere man, since the Fall, ever perfectly obeyed all the commandments of God? Has any man done *all* his duty? If not, I reckon that no one has done *more* than his duty. We do not generally go beyond a thing, until after we have come up to it. A cup does not usually run over before it is full. But,

2. According to this doctrine of the church of Rome, men are capable of a higher virtue than God has required! They can, and actually do, perform virtuous and holy acts, which belong to neither of the tables of the law, and which are comprehended neither in the love of God nor in the love of man! Is this idea admissible? The Psalmist says, "Thy commandment is exceeding broad." But according to this doctrine, the virtue of the Roman Catholic is *broader*. I, however, do not believe it.

3. There is no counsel which does not become a precept or a command,—provided it be found that God can be more glorified by a compliance with it than otherwise. The thing recommended, if in any case it be apparent that the doing of it will redound to the glory of God, is *ipso facto* required, and becomes a duty. Take the favourite example of the Roman Catholics, celibacy; which, they say, is recommended, but not required.

Now, if any one find, that he can better serve God in the single condition than in the matrimonial state, celibacy is, in that case, his duty ; and, being a duty, it is a thing required, and it can be no work of supererogation. When celibacy is not a duty, there is no virtue in it. Does any one believe that Enoch would have been more virtuous, and walked more closely with God, if he had not had a wife and children ?

But I arrest my remarks ; lest, in criminating one kind of supererogation, I should myself be guilty of another.

---

### 56. *Convents.*

Every body knows how important convents. monasteries, nunneries, &c., are in the Roman Catholic religion. Who has not heard of monks and nuns, and of the establishments in which they respectively seclude themselves from the *world* ? What a pity they cannot keep *the flesh* and *the devil* as far off ! But the flesh they must carry in with them ; and the devil is at no loss to find an entrance. There are no convents that can shut these out ; and it is my opinion, that it is not of much use to exclude the world, if they cannot at the same time shut out the other two. The world would be very harmless, but for the flesh and the devil. Besides, I am of opinion that a person may be *of* the world, though not *in* the world. *In*, but not *of* the world, is the Protestant doctrine, and the true plan. People forget, that the world is not the great globe, with all its land and water ; but that it is often an insidious little thing, which, ere one knows it, has taken up its lodgement in the heart. The heart can entertain the world. If so, convents cannot even keep out the *world*. They do not answer the purpose, therefore, for which they are intended.

But, be this as it may, I find nothing for convents in the Bible. In the Old Testament not a word about them—in the New not a word. Now, if they are such

grand contrivances for making people good, and for keeping them pure, I am surprised that they were never thought of till after the canon of Scripture was closed. Why do not the men who speak by inspiration of God, say any thing about them? This puzzles me. I wish some of the Roman Catholic writers would explain the reason. They tell us why St. Paul omitted to say any thing in his writings about the mass. It was, say the authors of the Rhemish Testament, in their annotations on Hebrews vii. 17, "because of the depth of the mystery, and the incredulity or feebleness of those to whom he wrote." We thank them for the admission, that the Apostle did not teach the doctrine of the mass. But how came they to know the reason of his silence upon it? Perhaps it was for a similar reason, that he maintained a perfect silence on the subject of convents!

But if convents are such clever things, why did not *Enoch* take the vow of celibacy, and go into one, instead of 'walking with God, and begetting sons and daughters?' How much better a man, according to the Roman Catholic notion, he would have been, had he only been a monk! And why did not St. John banish himself to some solitary Patmos, and there live the life of a hermit, before a persecuting emperor drove him into it? Why did not *Peter* and his wife part, and he turn friar, and she nun? We look to such characters for examples. Why did not the *Marys*, or some other of the pious women of whom we read in the Bible, take the veil? Monachism, they may say, is an improvement on those times. But I do not like the idea of improvements on a system arranged by the wisdom of the Son of God Himself.

There is what we call the *spirit* of a book. Now, the entire system of convents seems to me as clearly at variance with the spirit of the Bible, as one thing can be at variance with another. The Bible appears to have been written for persons who were to live in society with their fellow-men. It supposes human beings to be associated together in families and in civil communities, not as immured in monasteries and shut up in nunneries.

It takes up the various relations of life, and descants on the duties growing out of them. But the system of monachism dissolves these relations. Is it Scriptural then? But why should I ask if that be Scriptural, which was first instituted by St. Anthony, in the fourth century after Christ?

Again, if the system be favourable to holiness, then all equally need it, since all are required to be equally holy—to be holy as God is holy. But what would soon become of us all, if the system should become universal, and all should adopt these means of holiness? This idea, that the means of the most eminent sanctity required of any, are not accessible and practicable to all, is radically erroneous. It is no such thing. It cannot be. Therefore I conclude against convents.

But, while I impugn the system, I bring no charges against the existing edifices, called convents. I would never have them assailed by any other force, than that which belongs to argument. If I were a Roman Catholic, I could not more indignantly reprobate than, being a Protestant, I do, the recent burning of one of these buildings. If truth and argument can prostrate them, let them fall; but not by axes, and hammers, and fire-brands. All I contend for is, that the whole system of convents is unscriptural. Those who inhabit them may be as pure as those who live outside, and so I shall believe them to be, until I have *proof* to the contrary. This plan of suspecting, and of making mere suspicion the ground of condemnation, is no part of my religion. It is a part of my Protestantism to *protest* against it.

57. *Mr. Berrington and Mrs. More.*

In reading the interesting memoirs of Mrs. Hannah More, I was struck with a letter which that good lady received, in 1809, from Joseph Berrington, the Pope's Vicar-General,—taking exception to something she had said, in her book entitled “*Cœlebs*,” about Popery. He

is very much offended with her. He complains, among other things, of her use of the word Popery, to designate the Roman Catholic religion. Now, some of us do not make much use of that word, as knowing it is offensive to Roman Catholics; and we are not willing to say any thing irritating to them: and, when we do use it, I believe it is more for brevity than for any other reason—to avoid tedious circumlocution. It is as much out of regard to the printer as any thing else. I do not see, however, why they should so strongly object to the word Popery. They all hold to the spiritual supremacy of the Pope; and they all regard *him* as the head of the church. Why then should not their religious system be called after him? We call ours after the One whom we regard as supreme in spiritual matters, and the Head of the church. We call it Christianity, after Christ. Why not for the same reason call theirs Popery, after the Pope? We do not even get angry, when they call us Calvinists, and our doctrinal system Calvinism. Yet with much more reason might we do so; for what is Calvin to us? He is only one of the many thousand eminent men, who have espoused, substantially, the system of doctrine we hold.

I find in Mr. B.'s letter this remarkable sentence: "Nothing is more surprising than that you Protestants should be so utterly ignorant, as you really are, or seem to be, of our tenets; when we all, whatever be our country, think alike; and our catechisms and books of instruction lie open before the world." He says, nothing is more surprising. But there is one thing, which is even more surprising. It is, that any ecclesiastic should venture to write such a sentence. He says we Protestants are, or seem to be, utterly ignorant of their tenets. Now, the truth is, there are few things we are better acquainted with than the tenets of Roman Catholics.\* They say

---

\*The awkward fact is, that some of us know their real tenets much too well; for we have read and searched for ourselves some of their own books, published with the sanction of the highest authorities of their church. And, unfortunately for

we do not let them speak for themselves. Yes, we do. Do they not speak for themselves in their own manuals, breviaries, and catechisms, printed under their own sanction and supervision? If we take their tenets from their own books, and quote verbatim, and refer to the edition and page, is not that enough? Well, we do so. Yet they say we misrepresent them. How can that be? They may misrepresent and contradict themselves: but it is hard to hold us responsible for that. If we are ignorant of their *tenets*, it is because they do not themselves constantly *hold* to them. If they *let go* their doctrines as soon as Protestants attack and expose them; and, resorting to explanations, evasions, and glosses, do thus virtually *take hold* of something different from their original and published tenets, we are not to blame for that, I should think.

But Mr. B tells us what makes our ignorance so surprising:—"when we all, whatever be our country,

---

them, we choose to believe our own eyes, rather than what they choose to tell us: for we have learned, by sad experience, that—as occasions may arise—they will say to Protestants whatever seems most likely to serve their turn. Any one who will take the pains to examine the "Digest of the Evidence on the state of Ireland" taken before select committees of the two houses of Parliament in 1824—1825, and to compare the evidence given by Romish Bishops and Priests, with the documents produced by the learned editors, the Rev. W. Phelan and the Rev. Mortimer O'Sullivan, will be compelled to come to the painful conclusion, that—when the interests of his church are concerned—a Roman Catholic cannot be believed upon his oath. Full proof of this awful fact will be found in "Ultramontaniam, Past and Present—A Letter to the Right Hon. Viscount Palmerston, &c. &c., by the Rev. R. J. M'Ghee, M.A. London: 1863." And, more at large, in the "Nullity of the Government of Queen Victoria in Ireland, or the Pope the virtual Ruler of the Land; being an Exhibition of the Laws of the Papacy, set up by the Romish Bishops to subvert the Authority of their Lawful Sovereign, in 1832," by the same author; Second Edition—London, 1841. The former work—a pamphlet of 58 pages—is a brief summary of the facts more fully set forth in the larger work. It ought to be studied by every British Protestant.

think alike." Do they all think alike? They did not always all think alike. See history.\* And, so far as they do think alike, does the reader know how it comes about? It is by virtue of not thinking at all. But grant they all think alike. Does it follow that they think right? Has no error ever been very popular? The world all thought alike once on astronomy—all held the earth to be the centre of the system. But did

---

\* Bishop Hall, who died in 1656, wrote a book, entitled "The Peace of Rome," which has been republished (along with his "No Peace with Rome") by the Protestant Association, in its series of popular works against Popery. In this treatise there are, extracted from the writings of Cardinal Bellarmine alone, no less than 303 contradictions between Romish Authors—all of note and name; and 62 more from the works of Martin de Azpilcueta, or Aspicueta, commonly called Navarrus, on the doctrine of Confession alone. The learned author says: "I have willingly omitted divers small differences, which, if I had regarded numbers, might have caused the sum to swell yet higher." And again: "That Cardinal Bellarmine acknowledges those dissensions only which fall into the compass of his own controversies (if all those): omitting all others. For instance: of all those sixty and two differences in the matter of Penance, which I have gathered out of Navarre and Fr. á Victoria, he hath not confessed above five or six; so that, by the same proportion, whereas 303 contradictions are acknowledged, there cannot but be many hundreds wittingly by him concealed."

Some of these differences are, of course, upon minor matters; but some of them are on matters of great importance to the peace and comfort of the soul, and calculated to fill the minds of Romanists, who consider them, with painful doubt and uncertainty. An example of these discordant opinions, on a subject of much practical importance to the Romanist, is given in the note pp. 67, 68. All the differences on the subject of Confession and Penance are of the same, or greater, practical importance.

Even in regard to the Scriptures themselves, we have *Pope against Pope*. An authorized edition of the Vulgate, or Latin Version (made principally by Jerome, about the close of the 4th century) was published by Sixtus V, in 1590, accompanied by a bull, enjoining its universal reception, and forbidding the slightest alterations, under pain of the most dreadful anathemas. But it was scarcely published before it was discovered

they think aright? \* However, it is convenient to have a large number of persons all think alike; for then, if you can ascertain what one thinks, you know what all think; and if you read one book, you know what is in them all. So, if you chance to fall in with a Spanish or Italian Roman Catholic, and he tells you what he thinks, you know what every English and American Roman Catholic thinks; for they "all think alike." So, if you take up one catechism or book of instruction, and read that, you know what they all ought to contain. It saves a great deal of trouble.

But the Vicar complains bitterly of the Bishop of

to abound in errors, and was quickly called in. A more correct edition was published by Clement VIII, in 1592, accompanied by a similar bull: an edition still further improved in 1593. Dr. Thomas James, in his "*Bellum Papale, sive Concordia Discors Sixti Quinti et Clementis Octavi circa Hieronymianam Editionem*" (published in 1600), notices two thousand variations, some of whole verses, and many others clearly and decidedly contradictory to each other. Yet both editions were respectively declared to be authentic by the same plenitude of knowledge and power, and both guarded against the slightest alteration by the same tremendous excommunication! (See Cramp's Text Book of Popery. Third Edition. London, 1851; in which he quotes from *Townley's Illustrations of Biblical Literature*, vol. ii, 487—495). A new edition of James's "*Bellum Papale*," was published, London, 1840, edited by the Rev. J. E. Cox, A.M. What a vain boast is this pretended Unity of the Romish Church! A.S.T.

\* How was it in the days before the Flood? Noah, it seems, stood alone: "Thee have I seen righteous before me in this generation." (Gen. vii, 1.) The whole world was given over to enormous wickedness. (Gen. vi, 5, 6, 11—13.) The many millions of its inhabitants—far more, it is supposed, than the present population of the globe—all agreed in sin and rebellion against God; and (doubtless), in their unbelief and carnal worldliness and sensuality, scoffed at the righteous Noah, who, in faith and obedience to the Divine command, was building the Ark. (Matt. xxiv, 37—39; Luke xvii, 26, 27; Heb. xi, 7; 1 Pet. iii, 20; 2 Pet. ii, 5; with Gen. vi, 3. Here then was one man, with all the world against him. "The Deluge came, and judged between one and many." (Isaac da Costa.) A.S.T.

Durham, for asserting that the Romanists suppress the second commandment. He says it is no such thing, and that any school-boy could tell him different. And he affirms, that a catechism was put into the hands of the Bishop containing that commandment; and still he persisted in his assertion. The Bishop was right; and "nothing is more surprising" than that Mr. B. should deny it. I have myself seen two different catechisms, published in Ireland by Roman Catholic booksellers, and under the highest Roman Catholic authority, from both of which the second commandment was excluded; and it is left out of the "Christian's Guide," published in Baltimore by the Roman Catholics, as any one may see for himself.\* Now what could Mr. B. say to this?

\* The Romish Catechisms differ from each other in regard to the omission or insertion of the Second Commandment. I have, at this time, four of them open before me.

I.—The Most Rev. Dr. James Butler's Catechism. (See the note in p. 14.) Therein we read, p. 36 :

"Q.—Say the Ten Commandments of God ?

A.—1. I am the Lord thy God ; thou shalt not have strange gods before me. 2. Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain." In which the Second Commandment is passed over altogether, as if it had no existence.

II.—The General Catechism, revised, corrected, and enlarged by the Right Reverend James Doyle, D.D., Bp., &c., and prescribed by him to be taught throughout the Dioceses of Kildare and Leighlin. Stereotyped. Dublin: Printed by Richard Coyne, &c., 1828. In this we read, p. 25 :

"Q.—Say the Ten Commandments of God.

A.—I am the Lord thy God ; thou shalt not have strange gods before me : Thou shalt not make to thyself neither an idol or any figure to adore it. 2. Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain : for the Lord will not hold him guiltless that shall take the name of the Lord his God in vain."

Here we have a small portion of the *Second Commandment*, added to the *First*, but omitting the important words, "Thou shalt not bow down to them—for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God," and so on to the end.

III.—In the "Abridgment of Christian Doctrine," (See the note p. 51) we find it thus (pp. 45, 46, in the edition of 1844 ; but in another edition, 1828, p. 48) :

Would he say, "Oh! those were published in Ireland and America." But he says, "We all, *whatever be our country*, think alike." Would he say, that he spoke of 1809, and these were published since? But it is their boast, that they not only do now all think alike, but

---

"Q.—What is the First Commandment?

A.—I am the Lord thy God, who brought thee out of the land of Egypt, and out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt not have strange gods before me. Thou shalt not make to thyself a graven thing, nor the likeness of anything that is in heaven above, nor on the earth below, or of those things that are in the waters under the earth. Thou shalt not adore nor worship them; I am the Lord thy God, mighty, jealous, visiting the sins of the fathers upon their children, to the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; and shewing mercy to thousands of those that love me, and keep my commandments."—Exod. xx.

Here we have the whole of the Second Commandment (according to the Romish Version) tacked on to the First: whereby the peculiar character of the Second is merged in that of the First; and so opportunity is given to pass over its distinct and special meaning. It will be seen, too, that here also the important words, "thou shalt not bow down to them," are omitted. Also the word *image* is carefully avoided; and they build much upon it, as if by translating the word *Pesel* by "graven *image*," instead of "graven *thing*," we had corrupted the text! (though, in this connection, it would be hard to point out the difference between "a graven *thing*" and "a graven *image*.")

IV.—In a tract entitled "What every Christian must know. Confession; Laws of God, and of the Church; Rule of Life; Good Works; Sins; Conscience." London: Richardson and Son, 147, Strand; 9, Capel Street, Dublin; and Derby. (Without date.) We have, on p. 5:

"III.—THE COMMANDMENTS OF GOD.

1. I am the Lord thy God, thou shalt have no other God but me."

2. Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain." Where the Second Commandment is wholly omitted: as also it is in "The Poor Man's Manual," p. 16. I need not point out how well these differences in different Books and Catechisms must serve the purposes of the Church of Rome, and help her advocates to mystify the question at issue, and to delude those who are not aware of their artifices. A. S. T.

that they always did think alike. Would he say that, if it was left out of those catechisms, yet it was retained in others? Yes; but, if their catechisms differ, how do they all think alike? Besides, no one ever accused the Romanists of leaving the second commandment out of every one of their books. But why do they leave it out of any? Will they please to say, why they leave it out of any? They have never condescended to answer that question. They always evade it. If a man should publish successive editions of the laws of any country, and should leave out of some of the editions a certain important law, would it be sufficient for him to say, that he did not leave it out of all the editions? Why did he leave it out of any? Why did he not make them all uniform? A man may as well tell me I have no eyes, as deny that some Romish catechisms have been published without the second commandment. Now, why was ever a catechism published under Roman Catholic sanction without it? Did they ever publish one, in which they omitted any other of the commandments? Did Protestants ever publish a list of the commandments, with one omitted, and another divided so as to make out the ten? \* Alas for them! there is no getting out of this

---

\* They divide the Tenth Commandment into two. "9. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife. 10. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's goods." Yet these two clauses are transposed in Ex. xx, 17, and Deut. v. 21. Quite natural, if the Commandment be but *one*: very strange if they be *two* distinct Commandments. In the "Abridgment of Christian Doctrine," they are taken both together in the Exposition. The author evidently felt that they naturally go together. They are also taken together in the Catechism of the Council of Trent, as we find in Part III. chapter x., where we read thus:

"OF THE NINTH AND TENTH COMMANDMENTS.

*Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house; thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his man-servant, nor his maid-servant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is his."*

Wherein it is remarkable, and worthy of special note, that the compilers of the Catechism adopt the order of the clauses in Ex. xx. and not that in Deut. v.—which is usual in the

dilemma, into which they brought themselves by their mutilation of the decalogue. It is about the most unfortunate thing they ever did for themselves. I do not wonder that Mr. B. was restless under the charge. But surely he had too much good sense to suppose, that he had answered the Bishop, when he showed him a catechism that had the commandment in it. It is as if a man, charged with falsehood in a particular instance, should undertake to answer the charge, by showing that, in another instance, he had spoken the truth. The Romanists are very uneasy to get rid of this millstone about the neck of their religion. They see it is in danger of sinking it. But they cannot slip it off so easily; and if they cannot manage to swim with it, it must sink them. Well, if it does, and nothing but the system goes to the bottom, I shall not be sorry.

In the course of his letter, Mr. B. speaks of "the *anarchical* principle of private judgment." And is this a principle which leads to anarchy? Paul did not seem to think so. He says, "Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind." What anarchy must have existed in the Berean church, where, after hearing the word, they "searched the scriptures daily whether these things were so!" (Acts xvii. 11.) What confusion there must have been, where all read and thought for themselves! They needed an Inquisitor to set things to rights. He is the man to mend matters, when people fall to "searching the Scriptures." Well, if the 19th century will tolerate the denunciation of private judgment on any subject, I suppose it must be so: but I cannot say, Amen.

---

other Catechisms which I have examined. Thus it would seem difficult to ascertain, which (in the judgment of this United and Infallible Church) is the Ninth, and which is the Tenth Commandment! Certainly it would be very difficult to make out, from this chapter of the Catechism of the Council of Trent, which is the Ninth and which is the Tenth. Under several of the Questions these (so-called) *two* Commandments are distinctly treated as one, and spoken of in the singular. Google A. S. T.

58. *A New Method of Exciting Devotion.*

There seems to be no end to new discoveries. Marching mind appears to have no idea of *halting*. Probably improvement will go on till the world itself terminates. What should I see, in taking up the Observer of Jan. 3rd, but an article headed "Cathedral at St. Louis"? Then followed a description, taken, be it known, not from any scandalous Protestant paper, but from the "Catholic Telegraph," printed at Cincinnati, of the building, altar, &c. By the way, the altar is of stone; but they tell us, this is only temporary, and will soon be superseded by a superb marble altar, which is hourly expected from *Italy*. Why go all the way to Italy for an altar? Why not employ our own mechanics and artists? We have marble enough here, and men enough. But I suppose it is a *present*. Our country is receiving a great many presents now from abroad. Foreign *Roman Catholics* are particularly kind to us. You know we are making the great experiment, whether a free, representative government can sustain itself; and our *Austrian* and *Italian* brethren, sympathizing with us, want to help us all they can. They mourn especially over the deplorable lack of religion in this country, and are anxious to supply it. Nor is it in building and furnishing churches alone that they are disposed to help us. They cannot bear to see our children growing up in such ignorance. They are not used (they would have us believe) to an ignorant population; and then, what is to become of the Republic, if the people are not educated? So they come from Ireland, France, Italy, &c., male and female, to educate us. A sceptical person might be tempted to ask, if there is nothing of the kind to be done at home;—if, for example, they cannot find any uneducated children in *Ireland*, but they must come over here to find them. However that may be, they come. But what strikes me with wonder, is, that, when they get here, they are all for educating *Protestant* children. Why do they not give the children of *Roman Catholics*, their own people, a chance? There are many of them scat-

tered over the land, and they are not all self-taught. I should like to have this explained. Common sense suggests, that there must be a motive for making this distinction, and shrewdly suspects it is *proselytism*. Charity waits to hear if any more creditable reason can be assigned. But this is a digression.

Well, on the 26th of October the grand building was consecrated. The procession consisted of an "ecclesiastical corps" amounting to fifty or sixty, of whom four were bishops and twenty-eight priests, *twelve of whom were from twelve different nations*. You see they are coming upon us from all quarters. It would really seem as if all Europe were conspiring to pour in its priests among us. Here are priests of *twelve* different nations met at St. Louis! Protestantism here has to depend for its men and money on native Americans; but Popery, you perceive, has all Europe to draw upon. If, with this advantage, the latter religion should make considerable progress in our country, we must not be surprised. Whether this influx of foreign priests augurs good or evil to our free institutions, is a question on which I will express no opinion.

I come now to the novelty which suggested the title of this article—the new discovery—the improvement I spoke of. The editor, or his correspondent, says, "As soon as the procession was organized, the pealing of three large and clear-sounding bells, and the thunder of two pieces of artillery, raised all hearts, as well as our own, to the Great and Almighty Being." Now is not this something *new*? I always thought bells were to call people together, not to raise up their hearts to God. But here he says, they raised all hearts. However, it was with the help of the thundering artillery. It was the bells and guns together that did it. They made such a noise that at once all hearts were raised. What an effect from such a cause! Will the reader please to consider what was done, and what did it? All, hearts were raised to God, by means of three bells and two guns! Is not this a *new* method of exciting devotion? Who ever

heard before of noise composing the mind, and preparing it for devout exercises? According to this, the fourth of July should be the day of all others in the year most favorable to devotion. And what a calamity deafness now appears to be; and how to be pitied are they, who lived before the invention of gunpowder! I never knew before, that this was among the benefits of that invention, that it inspires devotional feelings, and raises hearts on high! But we must live and learn.

Well, all hearts being raised as before, "the holy relics were removed towards the new habitation, where they shall enjoy anticipated resurrection—the presence of their God in his holy tabernacle." What this means, the reader must find out for himself. Now, when the relics were moved, the writer tells us what the guns did. "The guns fired a second salute." They could not contain themselves. Neither could the writer. "We felt," says he "as if the soul of St. Louis was in the sound." A soul in a sound! Here is more than is *new*.

Then we are told who preached the dedication sermon; and afterwards we are informed, for our special edification, that "during the divine sacrifice" (the Protestant reader, perhaps, does not know what is meant by this phrase; but, if the *twelve* nations continue to send over their priests, we shall know all about it by-and-bye), "two of the military stood with drawn swords, one at each side of the altar; they belonged to a guard of honor, formed expressly for the occasion. Besides whom, there were detachments from the four militia companies of the city, the Marions, the Greys, the riflemen, and the cannoniers from Jefferson-barracks, stationed at convenient distances around the church." The reader will not forget, that certain professed ambassadors of "the Prince of Peace" were here engaged in dedicating a church to His service; and this is the way they took to do it. If they had been consecrating a temple to *Mars*, I don't know how they could have selected more appropriate ceremonies. Here were soldiers, drawn swords, guns, and, as we shall see presently, colours and drums

too, all to dedicate a church to the meek and lowly Jesus ; and that too on the day of *rest* !

One more quotation from this glowing description. "When the solemn moment of the consecration approached, and the Son of the living God was going to descend, for the first time, into the residence of his glory on earth, the drums beat the reveille, three of the star-spangled banners were lowered over the balustrade of the sanctuary, the artillery gave a deafening discharge." All that seems to have been wanting here was *three cheers*. Those would have been quite as suitable as the other accompaniments of the service. Reader, is this religion ? and are these the things which are pleasing to God ?

I have a word to say about the star-spangled banner. That is an ensign endeared to every American heart. Whether it is as highly esteemed by the *twelve* nations, I much doubt. But a church is not its appropriate place. There is another banner which should wave there—and that is not *star-spangled*. One solitary star distinguishes it—the Star—the Star of Bethlehem.

P.S. In preparing this edition, some verbal corrections have been made ; and the punctuation has been carefully attended to,—so as, it is trusted, to make the meaning more clear.

Also (in order to carry out the plan of publishing the work in Monthly numbers, each containing 16 pages and no more), in one or two instances, a few lines, which seemed not much to the purpose, have been omitted ; and, in two instances, the Articles, as they stood in the original edition, have been transposed.

The notes which have been added, will, it is hoped, tend to make the work more suitable to present circumstances, and to the state of the question in this Country ; and also to lead the reader into somewhat deeper and fuller views of "the Mystery of Iniquity" than the Author attempted to develop in the original work : for it is to be observed, that he does not make any pretensions to very extensive or profound research. He confines himself to a Scriptural and common sense view of those parts of the Romish system, which are most prominent, and which present themselves at once to the mind of an observant Christian. It is this, in fact, which makes the work so useful, and has made it so popular, as a first introduction to some knowledge of the Romish Controversy. . A. S. T.

## APPENDIX.

---

THUS far our Author,—ending, not amiss, with an illustration of the strange and carnal nature of Romish Devotion, which aptly illustrates what he says, in No. 12, (pp. 33, 34,) of “a religion without the Holy Spirit.”

For myself,—deeply as I was impressed with the awful character of the Romish Apostacy in reading the history of the Reformation,—I never had any adequate conception of the depth and blackness of its abominations, till I was led to examine for myself some Popish books of instruction and devotion. I took care to read those which were authenticated and sanctioned by Bishops of the Romish Church; and which were used or recommended *by them*, for the instruction of their own people. *Then* I soon came to understand, that Popery is indeed a Mystery of Iniquity, the Master piece of Satan,—devised by him,

Firstly, To enslave the minds of men in blind submission to human authority, in utter neglect and contempt of the Word and authority of Almighty God;

Secondly, To set aside the one only all-atoning Sacrifice of Christ, whereby He hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified (Heb. x. 14), by substituting for it, (1.) a pretended sacrifice, devised and offered up by a sinful and presumptuous man, usurping His Priestly Office, and (2.) human merits and superstitious observances for His perfect and everlasting Righteousness; (Dan. ix. 24; Rom. iii. 21, 22; 2 Cor. v. 21);

Thirdly, To kindle a strange fire of fancied devotion (compare Lev. x. 1, 2 with Is. l. 11), by working upon the natural affections and imagination of Fallen Man; and to substitute this for that Sacred Fire, which is kindled in the heart by the holy and heavenly operation of the Blessed Spirit of God. (Rom. viii. 26, 27; Jude 20; John iv. 24.) Hence it is, that the Romish Church has recourse to all pomp and magnificence of external worship; to images and paintings; to music and singing, the most refined and affecting; to incense and burning tapers; to splendid dresses and long processions;—in short, to everything that can impose upon the mind and captivate the senses, and thus work upon the heart and imagination of the “natural man” (“sensual, having not the Spirit,” Jude 19) till he fancies himself devout;—though he has not yet the least

conception what it is to worship God in Spirit and Truth, and has never yet experienced that cleansing and renewing by the Blood and Spirit of Christ (1 John v. 6 ; 1 Cor. vi. 11.) without which it is impossible for any child of fallen Adam to offer up one acceptable prayer.

Thus Romanism is, in fact a system which *practically* dishonours and denies every Person of the blessed Trinity ; and this under the highest professions and most specious pretences—palming an apostate Church upon the world, as the “One, Holy, Catholic, and Apostolic Church,”—out of which no one can be saved ! So that neither the craft nor the malice of Satan could go further. The Church of Rome has all the Scriptural marks of Antichrist—“the Man of Sin ;” and she cannot be better described than in the words of Prophecy, which foretold and portrayed the rise and character of this awful Apostasy centuries beforehand. (2 Thess. ii. 3—12 ; 1 Tim. iv. 1—6 ; Rev. xiii. 1—18 ; xvii 3—6.)

I need not quote the passages of Scripture at length. These references must suffice : but let the reader turn to them in his own Bible, and consider them well. I will conclude with quoting at length the Creed of Pope Pius IV. which has been often referred to in the preceding pages, and which is the acknowledged Creed of all Romanists—adding a few remarks. It is contained (as was mentioned in the note p. 22) in the Bull entitled “*Injunctum nobis*,” read and published at Rome, Dec. 9, 1564. It appears from the terms of that Bull, that all Ecclesiastics of the Church of Rome are strictly enjoined to make this profession of Faith, in the following form :

“I. N., with stedfast faith believe and profess all and every particular contained in the Symbol of faith which the holy Roman Church uses, namely :

**I BELIEVE** in one God the Father almighty, Maker of heaven and earth, and of all things visible and invisible ; and in one Lord Jesus Christ, the only begotten Son of God, light of light, true God of true God, begotten, not made, consubstantial to the Father, by whom all things were made ; who for us men, and for our salvation, came down from heaven, and was incarnate by the Holy Ghost of the Virgin Mary, and was made man ; was crucified also for us under Pontius Pilate, suffered and was buried, and rose again the third day, according to the Scriptures, and ascended into heaven, sits at the right hand of the Father, and will come again with glory to judge the living and the dead, of whose kingdom there will be no

end ; and in the Holy Ghost, the Lord and Life-giver, who proceeds from the Father and the Son ; who, together with the Father and the Son, is adored and glorified ; who spoke by the Prophets ; and one holy Catholic and Apostolic Church. I confess one baptism for the remission of sins, and I expect the resurrection of the body, and the life of the world to come. Amen.

*This is the ancient Creed of the Church—commonly called the Nicene Creed ; but it is, more properly, the Constantinopolitan Creed. It was drawn up, authenticated, and transmitted to us in its present form, by the first four General Councils—that of Nice in 325, that of Constantinople in 381, that of Ephesus in 431, and that of Chalcedon in 451. It was very solemnly recognised by the Council of Trent, in its Third Session, held Feb. 4, 1546 ; when it was introduced with these remarkable words : “ Wherefore it [the Council] has thought good, that the Symbol of Faith which the holy Roman Church makes use of, as being that principle wherein all who profess the faith of Christ must necessarily agree, and that firm and only foundation, against which the gates of hell shall never prevail, be expressed in the very same words in which it is read in all the churches ; which indeed is in this manner, “ I believe, &c.”*

Observe then, that “ *this firm and only foundation (fundamentum firmum et unicum) against which the gates of hell shall never prevail,*”—this “ *principle wherein all who profess the Faith of Christ must necessarily agree,*”—we Protestants hold fast : we keep it “ whole and undefiled :” the Church of England requires of Communicants no other profession of Faith. (See the Communion Service of our Church.) But the Church of Rome makes an innovation, unauthorized by any General Council, and contrary to an express decree of the Council of Ephesus (in 431), by adding to this Ancient Creed of the Church, which had stood unaltered for eleven hundred years, the following Modern Articles, which were unknown to the Creeds of the Christian Church till the 9th of December, 1564. Which then is the Ancient Faith ? and which is the Modern ? the Protestant ? or, the Roman ?—which, as distinguished from the Protestant, is especially set forth in the Articles which follow.

I most firmly admit and embrace apostolical and ecclesiastical traditions, and all other constitutions and observances of the same Church.

I also admit the sacred Scriptures, according to the sense which the Holy Mother Church has held and does hold, to whom it belongs to judge of the true sense and

interpretation of the Holy Scriptures ; nor will I ever take and interpret them otherwise than according to the unanimous consent of the Fathers.

I profess also, that there are truly and properly seven sacraments of the new law, instituted by Jesus Christ our Lord, and necessary for the salvation of mankind, though all are not necessary for every one ; viz : baptism, confirmation, eucharist, penance, extreme unction, order and matrimony ; and that they confer grace ; and of these, baptism, confirmation and order, cannot be reiterated without sacrilege.

I also receive and admit the ceremonies of the Catholic Church, received and approved in the solemn administration of the abovesaid sacraments.

I receive and embrace all and every one of the things which have been defined and declared in the Holy Council of Trent, concerning original sin and justification.<sup>1</sup>

I profess, likewise, that in the Mass is offered to God, a true, proper, and propitiatory sacrifice for the living and the dead ; and that in the most Holy Sacrament of the Eucharist, there is truly, really, and substantially, the body and blood, together with the soul and divinity of our Lord Jesus Christ ; and that there is made a conversion of the whole substance of the bread into the body, and of the whole substance of the wine into the blood, which conversion the Catholic Church calls transubstantiation.

I confess, also, that under either kind alone, whole and entire Christ, and a true Sacrament is received.

I constantly hold that there is Purgatory, and that the souls detained therein are helped by the suffrages of the faithful.

Likewise, that the saints reigning together with Christ are to be honoured and invoked, that they offer prayers to God for us, and that their relics are to be venerated.

I most firmly assert that the images of Christ, and of the mother of God, ever Virgin, and also of the other saints, are to be had and retained ; and that due honour and veneration are to be given to them.

I also affirm that the power of indulgences was left by Christ in the Church, and that the use of them is most wholesome to Christian people.

I acknowledge the Holy Catholic and Apostolic Roman Church, to be the mother and mistress of all Churches; and I promise and swear true obedience to the Roman Pontiff, the successor of St. Peter, prince of the apostles, and the vicar of Jesus Christ.<sup>2</sup>

I also profess and undoubtingly receive all other things delivered, defined, and declared by the sacred canons and General Councils, and particularly by the Holy Council of Trent; and likewise I also condemn, reject and anathematize all things contrary thereto, and all heresies whatever condemned, rejected, and anathematized by the Church.<sup>3</sup>

This true Catholic faith, out of which none can be saved, which I now freely profess and truly hold, I, N. promise, vow, and swear most constantly to hold and profess the same, whole and entire with God's assistance, to the end of my life, and as far as lies in my power I will take care that it be held, taught, and professed, by those who are subject to me, or are confided to my care<sup>4</sup>; so may God help me, and these holy Gospels of God. Amen."

### NOTES.

<sup>1</sup> This Article says *directly* nothing at all on those two very important subjects: but it says *indirectly* a great deal; for it subscribes and endorses all that was said by the Council of Trent—that is to say, a statement on Original Sin, under five heads, enforced by six Anathemas; and a long and elaborate statement on Justification, in Sixteen Chapters; followed by Thirty three Canons,—every one of which ends with an Anathema, or curse, on any one and every one who holds the notion therein condemned. It may be questioned whether one Romanist in fifty knows any thing distinctly about either the Doctrines maintained, or the Doctrines denounced with a curse, by the Council of Trent, on this important subject. This may seem to us strange and awful: but this subscription in the dark—this profession and confession of they know not what, is quite characteristic of the Romish System. If a man pro-

fesses, "I believe what the Church believes," (that is to say, the *Romish Church*) and knows no more about it, *he* is a very good Romanist—so much so, that he could not be better. This blind subjection to the Church is all that the Church of Rome cares for.

\* That the Church at *Jerusalem* was "*the Mother of all the Churches*" must be evident to all who read the New Testament. What pretence the Church of Rome *can* have to *that* title, it would be hard to say, with the facts of History before us. And she can have just as little claim to the title of "*Mistress of all Churches*." It is only by a series of unwarranted and unhallowed Usurpations, that she obtained any semblance of such a position. And, wherever she has obtained any thing like it, she has proved herself a cruel Step-mother, and an oppressive-tyrant.

\* This Article demands a little further consideration.

(1.) Only consider what the Romanist is called upon to profess and receive! "All other things delivered, defined and declared by the sacred Canons and General Councils, and particularly by the Holy Council of Trent." Now Archbishop Manse's *Concilia* consists of 31 volumes folio; Labbæus' *Councils*, 16 folio volumes: tolerably large works to wade through, in order to find out what we are to believe! Besides which, there are great disputes respecting the number of General Councils, and as to those which are to be accounted General. As, for instance, it is greatly disputed between the Gallicans and the Ultramontanists, how far the Council of Constance (held in 1414—1418,) was General and Authoritative. (This Council maintained that a General Council was superior to the Pope; and had authority to punish and depose him; and it actually did depose, or compel to resign, the three rival Popes who then divided the allegiance of the Church,—John XXIII. Gregory XII. and Benedict XIII.—and elected Martin V. This assumption of authority was exceedingly offensive to the Ultramontanists—i. e, the Italians generally, who upheld to the utmost pitch the supreme Authority and Infallibility of the Pope; but it was highly acceptable to the French, who zealously maintained what are called the Gallican Liberties.) Yet—notwithstanding this dispute—strange to say, all Roman Catholics admit, that its later sessions, held under and approved by Martin V. were authoritative and binding upon the Church! (So that the very same Council was at one time General and Ecumenical, and at another not!) Here, then, there is room for endless enquiry, and for inextricable perplexity and confusion! And yet this is "*an Infallible Church*"! This is the Church which boasts, that it is *always and every where the same*!

(2.) The concluding clause, "I also condemn, reject, and anathematize, &c.," also calls for remark. It should be well

known, that the Church of Rome has been superabundant in its *anathemas*, or curses, upon all who differ from it—even in the most minute particular. The Canons of the Council of Trent, every one of which ends with an *anathema*, are 134 in number; and that Council concluded with "*Anathema to all Heretics*," in which all the Fathers of that Council joined with acclamation.

In the same spirit, we have the following sentence of excommunication and cursing from the "*Bulla Cœnæ Domini*."

"1.—We excommunicate and curse on the part of God Almighty, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, by the authority also of the Blessed Apostles Peter and Paul, and by Our Own, all Hussites, Wicklephists, Lutherans, Zuinglians, Calvinists, Hugonots, Anabaptists, Trinitarians and Apostates whatsoever from the Christian Faith, and all and singular other Heretics, under whatsoever name they may be classed, and of whatsoever sect they may be; and those who believe, receive, or favour them, and all those who defend them in general, whosoever they be, and all those who, without Our authority and that of the Apostolic See, knowingly read or keep, print, or in any way whatsoever, from any cause, publicly or privately, upon any pretence or colour whatsoever, defend their books which contain heresy, or treat of Religion; also Schismatics, and those who pertinaciously withdraw themselves or secede from obedience to Us, and to the Roman Pontiff for the time being."

N.B. This Bull was published by four Popes:—Paul V., in 1610; Urban VIII., in 1627; Clement XI., in 1701; and Benedict XIV., in 1741. And it was set up by the Popish Bishops in Ireland, as part of the Canon Law for the Ecclesiastical Government of that country, A.D. 1832.

To this may be added part of the Third Canon of the Fourth Lateran Council, as taken from the *Corpus Juris Canonici*, Decretal. Greg. IX. Lib. v. Tit. vii. Cap. 13, de Hereticis.

"We excommunicate and curse every heresy which exalteth itself against the holy, orthodox, and Catholic Faith, which we have set forth above; condemning all heretics, by whatsoever names they may be reckoned: who have indeed divers faces, but their tails are bound together, for they agree together in folly.

"Let such persons, when condemned, be left to the secular power who may be present, or to their officers, to be punished in a fitting manner, those who are of the clergy being first degraded from their orders: so that the goods of such persons, being laymen, shall be confiscated; but, in the case of clerics, be applied to the churches from which they receive their stipends." This Council was held under Innocent III., in 1215.

"The words in the conclusion of this Creed, 'and as far as lies in my power, I will take care that it be held, taught, and pro-

fessed by those who are subject to me, or are confided to my care," are omitted by some Romish writers in citing it: as, for example, by C. Butler, Esq., in his "Historical Memoirs of the English, Irish, and Scottish Catholics since the Reformation," in the Appendix to Vol. iii. ; and by Dr. Challoner, in "The Grounds of the Catholic Doctrine, as contained in the profession of faith published by POPE PIUS IV." Fifteenth Edition. London. 1844 p. 6. It would seem that these writers did not wish it to be known, that their Priests are bound by Oath, not only to believe all these Articles themselves, but also to impose them upon others to the utmost of their power. I believe too, that the Romish Priests exercise very great prudence, in regard to the amount of instruction which they give to their subjects. Especially this is the case in this Protestant Country ; in which it is very convenient to have a number of persons (more particularly in the respectable classes of Society) who, while adhering to the Romish Communion, adopt and profess, to a vast extent, the principles of Modern Liberalism, and talk (in good faith, *so far as themselves are concerned*) the language of moderation, toleration and charity. Nevertheless the real principles of the Church of Rome are to be found in the Creed of Pius IV, and the Bull "*Cœnæ Domini*," and the third Canon of the Fourth Council of Lateran, and similar documents ; and, more at large, in the Theology of Dens and of Alphonso Liguori, and in the *Corpus Juris Canonici*, &c., &c. If any one desires to know something of the secrets, and of the awful depths, of this System of Iniquity, he cannot do better than study the writings of the Rev. Robert J. M'Ghee on the subject, and especially the volume entitled "*The Nullity of the Government of Queen Victoria in Ireland, or the Pope the Virtual Ruler of the Land. Being an Exhibition of the Laws of the papacy, set up by the Romish Bishops to subvert the Authority of their Lawful Sovereign.*" London : 1841."

Lastly, let it be remembered, that, however smoothly Romanists may talk at present, and however they may contrive to keep out of sight the evils and iniquities of this Antichristian System, especially its Anti-Social and Anti-National abominations,—it is this awful System, not in its milder form, but in all its persecuting fury, and with all its atrocities, which they are seeking, desiring and endeavouring, by all means fair and foul, *per fas et nefas*, to re-establish in this Country. O that all who call themselves Protestants would take warning ! for forewarned is forearmed. But woe unto us—woe unto our Country—if we despise the warning !

A. S. T.





~~ANNEX LIB.~~

~~ANNEX LIB.~~

5450  
.673

DATE ISSUED	DATE DUE	DATE ISSUED	DATE DUE

